Cornell University Library
Ithaca, New York

THE GIFT OF
ALFRED C. BARNES
1889
The original of this book is in the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in the United States on the use of the text.

http://www.archive.org/details/cu31924029294588
THE PROBLEM OF THE PASTORAL EPISTLES
PREFACE

This essay is an attempt to show how the language of the Pastoral Epistles can be used as a key to unlock the old secret of their origin.

It is not a complete Introduction to these epistles, but only a contribution towards that larger subject. On the other hand, it includes rather more than a series of linguistic studies pure and simple. In the matter before us, language is only one of several factors which are closely interconnected and refuse to be kept in separate water-tight compartments. The full significance of each is only seen in its relation to the rest.

This relation is indicated in Part I, where the problem is stated with the conclusion to which, in the mind of the present writer, every single item in the whole wide field of inquiry seems to lead. The principal items other than linguistic are named of necessity, for purposes of orientation; but as, in a number of cases, the evidence on which they rest is not submitted, no further stress is laid upon them in these pages.

Part II is devoted exclusively to linguistic evidence, and arguments based upon it, in support of the opinion that these epistles received their present shape at the hands, not of Paul, but of a Paulinist living in the early years of the second century.

Part III deals with the genuine Pauline elements embodied in these epistles. These are separated from the non-Pauline material, and classified under two main categories:

1. Phrases borrowed from our ten Paulines, and 2. personal notes written by the real Paul to the real Timothy and Titus on various occasions which are specified. This is done without recourse to the hypothesis of a Release and Second Imprisonment; and it is argued that that hypothesis, being thus superfluous and otherwise without adequate support, falls to the ground, and with it, the entire modern case for the 'genuineness'—meaning the Pauline authorship—of these epistles as a whole.

In the effort to avoid tiresome repetition of clumsy periphrases
PREFACE

and for the sake of brevity and convenience, the present writer has occasionally made use of terms like 'Conservative', 'Traditional', 'Orthodox', on the one hand, and 'Liberal' or 'Critical' on the other. In doing so, he wishes to disclaim the least shade of partisan suggestion, and to express the hope that these epithets will be taken, as they are certainly meant, without either prejudice or offence. While stating his own opinions quite frankly, it has been his constant desire to write at the same time very dispassionately, in all fairness, and with all due respect for the judgements, and regard for the feelings, of others.

The nucleus of the present work was read in November 1919 before the Oxford Society of Historical Theology. It was later expanded into a thesis, for which, in September 1920, the Senate of London University conferred on the writer the degree of Doctor of Divinity. It has since been revised throughout and to a large extent re-written, with material alterations and additions, especially in Part III and in the Appendices.

The Statistical data in Part II and in the Appendices are based upon Westcott and Hort's edition of the New Testament in Greek, Moulton and Geden's Concordance to the Greek Testament, and Goodspeed's Index Patristicus and Index Apologeticus. The text in Appendix IV follows that of A. Souter.

Beaconsfield,
September, 1921.
## CONTENTS

### PART I. INTRODUCTORY

1. The Problem of the Pastorals .......................... 1
2. Principles of Investigation .............................. 2
3. Thesis .................................................. 5
4. The name ‘Pastoral Epistles’: its origin, meaning, and application to the Epistles to Timothy and Titus .... 13
5. Other titles by which they have been designated collectively .... 16
6. Their Common Elements and Characteristics ............. 16

### PART II. UNPAULINE ELEMENTS

#### CHAPTER I. LINGUISTIC PECULIARITIES OF THE PASTORALS AS COMPARED WITH THE OTHER PAULINES

Introductory ............................................. 18

1. Vocabulary:
   
   A. Words found in the Pastorals, but not in Paul (i.e., not in the ten Paulines):
      
      (1) *Hapax Legomena* .................................. 20
      (2) In other N. T. books ............................. 21
   
   B. Words found in the Pastorals and also in Paul:
      
      (1) Not elsewhere in the N. T. ..................... 24
      (2) In other N. T. books ............................. 26
   
   C. Words found in Paul, but not in the Pastorals:
      
      (1) Not elsewhere in the N. T. ..................... 31
      (2) In other N. T. books ............................. 31
         a. Nouns, verbs, adjectives, &c. ................. 31
         b. Particles, prepositions, pronouns, &c. ........ 36
   
2. Grammar ............................................. 38
3. Style ................................................. 40
CHAPTER II. DIFFICULTY OF RECONCILING THESE PECULIARITIES WITH PAULINE AUTHORSHIP, EVEN BY REFERRING TO

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>The Writer</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Circumstances</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Subject-matter</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Amanuensis</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Recipients</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Forgery</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Literary Analogies</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Derivatives</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Septuagint</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Classical Words</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER III. LANGUAGE OF THE PASTORALS AND OF PAUL COMPARED WITH THAT OF EARLY SECOND-CENTURY WRITERS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Introductory</td>
<td></td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. <em>Hapax Legomena</em> in the Apostolic Fathers and Early Apologists</td>
<td></td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Other non-Pauline words in</td>
<td></td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Pauline words found in the Pastorals, but not in the A. F.</td>
<td></td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. &quot; found in the Pastorals and also in the A. F. and Apologists</td>
<td></td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Pauline words wanting in the Pastorals and A. F. and Apologists</td>
<td></td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. General Analysis</td>
<td></td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. Cognates and Derivatives</td>
<td></td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. Patristic <em>Hapax Legomena</em></td>
<td></td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. The Residue: (a) Words occurring neither in Paul, nor in the A.F., nor in the Apologists, but found in non-Christian writers between A.D. 95 and 170</td>
<td></td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Words found in no other writer of that period</td>
<td></td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Summary</td>
<td></td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PART III. PAULINE ELEMENTS

CHAPTER I. PHRASES TAKEN FROM THE TEN EPISTLES OF PAUL

CHAPTER II. PERSONALIA

Section 1. Reasons for refusing to regard the personal references in the Pastorals as fictitious

Section 2. The Second Imprisonment theory: its dependence on the mistaken assumption that they cannot be fitted into the known life of Paul

Section 3. The five genuine notes. Their several dates, birth-places, and occasions

EPILOGUE

Importance of present results, if accepted, for New Testament Criticism and Church History

APPENDICES

I. Analysed Vocabulary of the Pastoral Epistles and of Paul

II A. Stereotyped Phrases in the Pastorals

II B. Pauline Phrases in the Pastorals

II C. 1 Peter and the Pastorals

II D. 1 Clement and the Pastorals

III. Bibliography

IV. Text of the Pastorals, showing words which do not occur in the ten Paulines, Hapax Legomena, and Pauline Phrases

(Erratum. 1 Tim. v. 6 τέθυμηκε should be printed red.)
LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

A. A. = Apostolic Age.
A.C.L. = (Chronologie der) altchristlichen Litteratur.
A. F. = Apostolic Fathers.
Ap. = Apologia I.
Appts. = Apologists.
App. = Appendix.
Ar. = Aristeides.
Ath. = Athenagoras.
Barn. = Ep. of Barnabas.
1 Clem. = 1 Clement.
2 Clem. = 2 Clement.
D. B. = Dictionary of the Bible.
Dgn. = Epistula ad Diognetum.
Did. = Didache, Teaching of the Twelve Apostles.
E. B. = Encyclopaedia Biblica.
Ep. = Epistle or Epistula.
Epp. = Epistles or Epistulae.
E. T. or E. Tr. = English Translation.
Eus. = Eusebius.
Exeg. = Exegetische (Abhandlung etc.)
Gk. = Greek.
G. T. = Greek Testament.
Hap. Leg. = Hapax Legomena or Hapax Legomenon.
H. E. = Historia Ecclesiastica.
Herm. = Hermas.
" = Mandate.
" Sim. = Similitude.
" Vis. = Vision.
H. P. B. = Holtzmann, Pastoralbriefe.
Ign. = Ignatius.
Jus. = Justin.
Mar. or M. P. = Martyrdom of Polycarp.
Mel. = Melito.
O. N. T. = Other books of the New Testament.
O. T. = Old Testament.
Pap. = Papias.
PfB. = Pastoralbriefe.
Pastls. or P. E. = Pastoral Epistles.
Pline. = Pauline.
Plp. = Polycarp ad Philippenses.
Ta. = Tatian.
W. H. = Westcott & Hort.
75/9 = 75 times in 9 Epistles.
PART I

INTRODUCTORY

(1) The Problem of the Pastorals, as our New Testament Epistles to Timothy and Titus are now usually called,¹ is the problem of their origin.
LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

A. A. = Apostolic Age.
A C. L. = (Chronologie der) altchristlichen Litteratur.
A. F. = Apostolic Fathers.
Ap. = Apologia I.
Appts. = Apologists.
App. = Apologia II.
App. = Appendix.
Ar. = Aristides.
Ath. = Athenagoras.

CORRIGENDA AND ADDENDA

p. 36, l. 6, for erpetitions read repetitions
p. 38, l. 26, (i) The phrase ö μεν ... ö δε &c. should be omitted in view
of 2 Tim. ii. 20.
p. 92, l. 18, for 183 read 185
p. 137, l. 3, before Apostolic Fathers insert In
p. 180, l. 11, after 1911; add E. F. Brown, Lon. 1917;
p. 183, l. 1, after 1897; add J. Macpherson (American Journal of
Theology, pp. 47 f.) 1900;
p. 183, l. 13; after 1911; add J. V. Bartlett, 'The Historic Setting of the
Pastoral Epistles' (Expositor, 8th series, vol. v, pp. 47, 161, 256,
325), London, 1913 (superseding what is said on the subject in
Dr. Bartlett's 'Apostolic Age').

Harrison Pastoral Epistles

N. T. = New Testament
O. N. T. = Other books of the New Testament.
O. T. = Old Testament.
Pap. = Papias.
P.B. = Pastoralbriefe.
Pastls. or P. E. = Pastoral Epistles.
Pline. = Pauline.
Plp. = Polycarp ad Philippenses.
Ta. = Tatian.
W. H. = Westcott & Hort.
75/9 = 75 times in 9 Epistles.
PART I

INTRODUCTORY

(1) THE Problem of the Pastorals, as our New Testament Epistles to Timothy and Titus are now usually called,¹ is the problem of their origin.

In setting out to write an introduction to these Epistles, or a serious contribution towards that large subject, the nature of the task before us can be defined quite simply, though the task itself is anything but simple. It is to solve that problem. We must endeavour to promote a right understanding of their message and a just appreciation of their worth, by seeking first to ascertain and establish, as far as may be, the facts of their authorship, date, purpose, and composition.

Are they, or are they not, what on the surface and at first sight they give themselves out to be,—what official leaders of the Church, at any rate since the end of the second century, have declared them to be, and what so many millions of devout readers have believed them to be,—authentic first-hand products of the mind and heart of the Apostle Paul?

If so, at what moments in his life, under the stress of what special circumstances, and with what purposes in view, did he write them? Did he, as in the case of other epistles, use an amanuensis? If so, who or what manner of person filled this rôle; what degree of latitude did he receive, or take; and in what respects, if any, did he modify the original words and thoughts of his master? What further explanations can be given, and are they adequate to account for the many and marked differences, in form and in substance, between these and the other Pauline epistles?

¹ Chiefly on grounds of convenience, established custom, and for want of a better title. See further p. 13 ff. (4).
If not Paul, who then did write them? And as, in this case, it is hardly likely that the author's name can now be recovered, at any rate what sort of person was he? When did he live? In what circumstances, and with what aims, and in what spirit did he pen these epistles? Why did he conceal his own name and personality beneath that of the Apostle? To what extent must he be judged responsible for the mistake, if it be a mistake, into which so many generations of readers have been led? Was the deception deliberate and intentional, was it conscious, on his part? Did he actually in the first instance deceive anybody, or did the misunderstanding only arise after the matter had passed beyond his hands? How did he justify his procedure to himself and to his contemporaries? Did he or they feel that it needed any justification? From what sources of information did he derive his mental picture of the Apostle, of his life and death, his gospel and his methods of propagating it? What was his mental picture of the Apostle's life, more especially of his closing years? Did he believe that Paul was released at the end of the Roman imprisonment recorded in Acts, visited Spain, revisited Ephesus, Macedonia, Corinth, Troas, Miletus, Crete, wintered in Nicopolis, was imprisoned in Rome a second time, and only then suffered martyrdom? Or is the truth rather that he had never dreamed of any such extension of Paul's life, and that the imprisonment in which he makes Paul write 2 Timothy, was intended by him to be the same as we find recorded at the end of Acts, the same in which the epistles to Philemon, the Colossians, Ephesians, and Philippians had been written?

We speak of the 'author' in the singular. But whether these writings are all by the same author, whether they are each of them to be regarded as a unity or as composite, and as the work of one mind or of more than one, may not be taken for granted, but is precisely one of the questions we have to investigate.

More particularly, we have to consider and weigh carefully the evidence for and against the possibility that our author, if not Paul himself, may have had before him, and incorporated in his epistles, a certain quantum of genuine Pauline material. To what extent does he show acquaintance with our existing Paulines? Has he preserved any further authentic messages of the Apostle of which we should otherwise know nothing?
To all these questions an answer will be attempted, and the reasons for it given, in the ensuing pages.

(2) Principles of Investigation. In pursuing an inquiry of this kind, fraught with issues of such deep and far-reaching importance as this one obviously is, the writer of a modern Introduction is rightly expected, and in honour bound, to seek out and examine as far as humanly possible all the available evidence of every kind whatsoever, internal and external, with an absolutely open mind and a single eye to truth.

It would be highly improper for such a work calling itself historical, critical, scientific, or even simply honest, to begin by insisting on the necessity of any particular conclusion to any cause, however great or even sacred, in which the writer might be personally interested. The scholar who starts an investigation like this with the announcement that 'our whole position rests upon' the genuineness, meaning the direct Pauline authorship of these epistles, may or may not be able to establish what he sets out to prove. There is always the risk that his words may come back to him with the unfeeling retort that in that case he had better seek a safer position, or else make haste to set his present position on a more secure basis. Meanwhile he makes it difficult for those who perhaps do not altogether share that position to feel all the confidence they might desire in the complete impartiality of his investigation.

The one and only business before us is to discover by all means the truth, whatever it may be, whether or not it happens to coincide with our preconceived ideas, and whether or not it seems likely to prove convenient to the champions of any tradition, however august, or of any institution, however necessary in our eyes to human welfare. The practical, as well as the theoretical, results of whatever may ultimately prove to be the true solution to our problem, must be left to the end, if indeed they belong at all to the proper scope of a Biblical Introduction. Once the truth is established, it may be safely trusted to produce its own results; and these will probably be largely unforeseen, possibly embarrassing to some people, involving some readjustment, not to say reconstruction, but always in the long run for the sure, true, and lasting benefit of mankind.

In endeavouring to form an independent judgement on the
issues before him, the student of to-day must not ignore the labours of other men in the same field, but should faithfully observe the trend of previous investigations. In particular he must keep a very watchful eye for those points in the long controversy where two sets of equally learned and conscientious persons seem to have arrived at a deadlock,—pronouncing with equal conviction two quite contradictory verdicts. Inasmuch as both cannot be right, he must try to see whether either side has failed duly to note any pertinent facts adduced by the other. Where this cannot be demonstrated, he must try to see whether, by digging yet deeper, and pushing his investigations still further than either side has done hitherto, any issue that has so far remained a moot point may not be definitely settled one way or the other.

One great advantage following such a review of previous efforts is that it enables us to eliminate a number of hypotheses which may seem at first sight very promising and attractive, but to which unanswerable objections were at once pointed out; so that it would be sheer waste of time to pursue the subject any further in those directions.

Another good result that probably will, and certainly should, follow from this wider acquaintance with other men's labours, is a strong check to undue self-confidence and hasty dogmatism.

After seeing so many experienced and competent scholars arrive at what must be a false conclusion, apparently without being troubled by the shadow of a suspicion that they might after all be quite mistaken, it would be inexcusable, however natural, to let oneself fall into the very same error.

On the other hand, it would be no less grave an error to sink into a state of hopeless scepticism as to the possibility of ever finding out the truth. However presumptuous the claim to have finally solved a problem which has divided for more than a century the best scholarship of the world, it would be an even greater mistake to conclude that the problem is insoluble and the truth incapable of demonstration. "Truth will out. After all the issue is in this case a clear one. Either Paul wrote these epistles substantially as they stand or he did not. It is true that the latter alternative holds within itself several widely different possibilities. But there is no need for these, to obscure the
main question. If not Paul himself, let the author have been who he may, it should be possible in the long run to find him out. Some hint of his own views and personality, some mark of the age to which he belonged, was bound to escape him, however skilful and, for a time, successful his attempt may have been to hide his own identity under that of the Apostle. The emergence of many such hints, or of many facts capable of such an interpretation, could not in any case be ignored. Nor would their significance seem to be lessened by their inobtrusiveness, nor by the fact that they are only now brought to light as a result of the most minute and searching investigation.

Whether or not the conclusion which must finally commend itself to all competent minds is now in sight, the future alone can decide. Those who have come nearest to the real difficulties will be the least inclined to indulge in over-positive assertions. Though it may not be given us to reach the goal, it is something to have pressed honestly towards it,—to have laboured with the one desire to know the truth. Those who so labour may not themselves arrive. At least they may know the satisfaction of having cut some of those steps in the rock, by which others in due time will gain the summit.

In its main outline the view put forward in these pages has no claim to originality. It is held by many scholars, including some of the very highest reputation. But certain new features are here embodied, and certain fresh considerations urged in its support. The effect of these is to encourage the belief that we have before us the true solution of this great problem, and the only one consistent with the whole of the evidence now forthcoming.

(3) Thesis. The precise character of these conclusions will appear gradually and in detail as the work proceeds; but it may be convenient to the reader, and may convey a sense of direction as he makes his way through the somewhat complicated mass of data which must come up for examination, if we set down here at the outset in barest outline the main thesis to which every single item in the whole variegated programme seems to point.

"It is, first, that these epistles, in anything like their present form, cannot be the direct work of the Apostle. This negative result follows from a great number and variety of considerations including more than one group of facts which would by itself be
sufficient to create the gravest doubts as to the Pauline author-
ship, but which, in their converging and cumulative effect, seem
altogether overwhelming and decisive. These are partly chrono-
logical, partly linguistic, polemic, doctrinal, ecclesiastical,
psychological, to name only the principal types of difficulty.
But the fact is that from whatever point of view we approach these
epistles, the further we carry our inquiry, the more impressive
becomes the body of undeniable facts demanding explanation,
and requiring the utmost ingenuity to reconcile them, if indeed
they can be reconciled, with their apostolic origin. (Defenders
of the traditional view are obliged to claim the benefit of the
doubt, and insist on a shadowy ‘off-chance’, much too often.)

(i) It is now agreed by the overwhelming majority of con-
servative scholars that these epistles cannot by any means be
fitted into the known life of Paul as recorded in Acts; and that
if Paul wrote them, he must have done so during a period of
release from that imprisonment in which the Lucan history
leaves him, and at the close of a subsequent second Roman
imprisonment. But this alleged release and second imprison-
ment, in spite of all great names and arguments in its favour, must
be definitely dismissed as a legend without valid historical basis.
So far from supporting this legend, the Personalia in the Pastorals
provide, as we shall show, conclusive evidence against it. Even
if the second imprisonment were generally accepted as ‘an
assured fact of history’ (Harnack, A. C.L. i, p. 240) the remaining
arguments against the Pauline authorship of these epistles would
still be, as Harnack himself maintains, decisive (ib. p. 480).

(ii) The result of a close and comprehensive comparison of the
language of the Pastorals with that of the ten Paulines on the
one hand, and that of the Apostolic Fathers and early Apologists
on the other, is itself fatal to the traditional opinion. Strong as
the critical case here has long been admitted to be, the facts go
far beyond any statement that has hitherto appeared even from
the critical side, and still further beyond all that has ever yet
been admitted or dealt with from the conservative point of view.
It is true that these epistles contain a considerable number of un-
mistakably Pauline phrases, such as could perfectly well have been
taken direct from our ten ‘Paulines’ by a diligent student with
these before him. And the ‘Personalia’ in 2 Tim. and Titus,
when isolated from the main body of these epistles, and submitted to the same linguistic tests, are found to be thoroughly Pauline in vocabulary, idiom and style. But for the rest, the style of the Pastorals is radically different from Paul’s, and their vocabulary is not that of the Apostle, but is that of early second-century Christendom as known to us from the writings of that period. See further the summary at end of Part II (p. 84 ff.).

(iii) The whole ecclesiastical situation and atmosphere presupposed in these epistles represents a stage of development beyond that for which we have any evidence in the lifetime of Paul or in the Apostolic Age, but entirely in keeping with that of the period to which ‘Liberal’ criticism assigns them.

(a) The False Teaching which it is a main purpose of this author to counteract, in so far as a clear and coherent picture of it can be derived from the allusions in these epistles, is of a type which did not, so far as we know, exist in Paul’s lifetime, but was certainly a real danger to the Church half a century or so later. And the very vagueness and generality of those allusions for the most part is not at all in the manner of the real Paul in dealing with the errorists of his own day.

(b) The positive doctrine of these epistles is professedly Pauline, but it is so in the sense rather of the Paulinism of the second and third generations than of the Apostle himself. Along with many undoubtedly Pauline features, terms and expressions, it includes certain elements which betray a later date, and omits others which are vital and central to the original Pauline gospel.

(c) The type of ecclesiastical organization presupposed, and the whole stress and emphasis laid on matters of Church polity, is foreign to all that we otherwise know of Paul’s ideas on such matters. It may be accurately defined as more advanced than the state of things revealed in the Roman Clement, but less so than in the Ignatian Epistles.

(iv) It is psychologically inconceivable that the real Paul should have addressed the real Timothy and Titus in many of the terms, or in the general tone adopted by the Paul of these

---

1 iii. a-c. These paragraphs are given for purposes of orientation, and as an expression of personal opinion. But as the evidence on which that opinion is based falls beyond the scope of this essay, and as these matters are disputed, no further stress is laid upon them here.
epistles. It is neither necessary nor just to disparage the personality and spirit of this author as it appears in his writing. But the fact remains that with all his excellent qualities and high gifts he was a very different type of person indeed, and for all his fervent admiration of the great Apostle, and loyal devotion to his name and memory, his was an altogether different kind of spirit from that which burns and throbs in every page of the genuine Paulines.

The positive conclusion, then, which forms the main thesis of the present work is that the real author of the Pastorals was a devout, sincere, and earnest Paulinist, who lived at Rome or Ephesus, and wrote during the later years of Trajan or (? and) the earlier years of Hadrian's reign. He knew and had studied deeply every one of our ten Paulines. In addition to these he had access to several brief personal notes written by the Apostle on various occasions (to be specified in due course) to his friends Timothy and Titus, preserved by them till their death, and then bequeathed as a priceless heirloom either to the Church or to some trusted friend.

There was also Paul's last letter and farewell to Timothy, written not long after Philippians, on the eve, or possibly on the very day, of his martyrdom. Our 2 Timothy, which was the first of the three to be written, consists of this last letter expanded and brought up to date by the auctor ad Timotheum to meet the requirements of his own day, with the three shorter notes, which had really been written earlier, two of them years earlier, added as a sort of appendix or postscript. In Titus also there is a genuine note to Titus dating from about the same time as 2 Corinthians, appended in iii. 12 ff. 1 Timothy, which is certainly the latest of the three, representing as it does a distinct advance on the others in the development of Church organization, opposition to heretics, &c., is destitute of such original fragments as enrich the others; the obvious and natural explanation of which fact is that, in responding to the demand for more letters of the same kind, our author had no more genuine notes in his possession, and was incapable of inventing such details. One or two half-hearted experiments in this direction (i. 3; iii. 14; v. 23) only illustrate the last remark, and are no exceptions to it.

Our author was acquainted with the Synoptic tradition
INTRODUCTORY

(Matt.-Luke) and perhaps with Acts, 1 Peter,¹ and 1 Clement.² He would naturally be acquainted also with current traditions touching the life and death of the Apostle. He believed honestly and wholeheartedly the Pauline gospel as he understood it. At the same time he shared the ideas of the Church of his own day on matters both of belief and of polity. These ideas represented, in fact, a perfectly natural development, due to the changed conditions of the times, in the direction of a more definite and formal statement of the Christian faith, and a more highly organized constitution of the Christian society and especially of its official leaders. Of this difference, however, from the original Pauline conceptions, the writer himself was no more aware than were his contemporaries. He and they regarded themselves as simply holding on to the genuine apostolic teaching.

For such a man and for such minds there was much in the circumstances of the Church to give grounds for grave concern. As at all other periods, the purity and spirituality of Christian belief and conduct alike were continually threatened by the pressure of forces from the outside world. These were partly Jewish and partly Pagan, and so included a variety of elements by no means all in harmony with one another. On the one hand there was a tendency towards some forms of asceticism, on the other to a recrudescence of pagan licentiousness. In the sphere of doctrine there was a proneness to wild speculation, leading to barren discussions, heated arguments and violent quarrels. An active propaganda was being carried on within the Church, taking the form partly of certain ‘Jewish myths’ and ‘genealogies’, partly of certain ceremonial restrictions having as their intellectual basis a dualistic philosophy. The propagandists showed a feverish activity, going from house to house, and finding no small measure of success, particularly among the women-folk. Some of them dabbled in the occult arts with the usual disastrous results. They asked and received money as the price of their teaching, and some had grown rich in this way.

All this was obviously incompatible with any real loyalty or respect for the memory and teaching of Paul. There was, in fact, a marked drift away from that type of Christian profession which still revered his name, and clung to what was believed to

¹ Appendix II C, p. 175. ² App. II D, p. 177.
be the pure original Pauline gospel. There was even in some cases an open depreciation of the personal influence and authority of the great Apostle of the Gentiles. And the new methods were equally inconsistent with any sort of respect for the authority of living representatives of the Pauline Church in general. Insubordination with all its attendant evils was spreading apace. Moral laxity was on the increase. And while the calm and happy fellowship of the Christian society was being marred by interminable wranglings, the Christian name and profession were being brought into disrepute with an outside world that watched with jealous eyes, only too ready to fasten on any occasion for scandal, or any excuse for active persecution.

In attempting to cope with this situation, experience seemed to force on earnest minds the necessity for a more precise and definite articulation of positive belief, greater care in the selection of those called to hold office in the Church, a quickening of zeal, a deepening of piety, and a revival of enthusiasm for the Pauline gospel. The best minds in the Church sighed for a return of the old apostolic fervour and sanctity. They had every reason to realize the need for a rekindling of the heroic courage with which Paul had faced tribulation, persecution, and finally martyrdom. And it seemed to some of them that nothing could be better calculated to promote such objects than a letter written in the spirit, bearing the name, and recalling the very familiar words of the great Apostle.

The time was ripe for such an effort. A circulation was guaranteed by the existence of a circle of readers, who were already familiar with at least the ten Paulines which have come down to us. It is even conceivable that the demand may have found definite expression in some such form as we find suggested by the story in the Muratorian Canon (ll. 9-15) describing the genesis of the Johannine Gospel, or by the statements of Dionysius of Corinth (c. A.D. 160, Eus. H.E. IV. xxiii), and Polycarp (Phil. iii. 1 f.), to the effect that they had written their epistles, not wholly on their own initiative, but at the explicit request of their brethren. It is, however, of course equally possible that the impulse to write may in the present instance have come purely from within or, why should we not say, from above, without the mediation of any human prompting?
There is at any rate no need for us to leave open the question as to the actual occasion which led to the writing of these epistles. The acquisition of those priceless relics, for the authenticity of which a responsible leader of the Church, say in A.D. 110, may perfectly well have had ample guarantees, was occasion enough for such a person as we have pictured him to be. Natural as it was, in view of their purely private character, that they had not been published earlier, it was equally natural in the circumstances just described for our Paulinist to feel of his own accord, even if it were not expressly laid upon him, that this was a sacred trust. He would neither desire nor dare to keep his treasure to himself, but would be only eager to discharge to the best of his ability the duty and privilege of passing it on to others in the form that, as it seemed to him, was likely to do the most good.

Had he lived in the twentieth century, no doubt he would have conceived and discharged his duty in this matter very differently. He would have handed in the original notes, exactly as they had come into his hands, to the curators of some great museum. And he would have issued to the public photographic facsimiles, with careful notes, detailing all relevant information. Where the text was defective he would have indicated the lacunae by asterisks. And if he ventured on an occasional conjectural emendation, he would have taken care that his readers knew exactly what he was doing.

But he lived in the early second century, and thought the greatest service he could render to his time and to the Church would be to issue Paul's farewell letter, and the other notes that came with it, not in their original bare brevity, with or without explanatory comments, but expanded somewhat into a message, an urgently needed message, to the Timothys and to the Church of its own day,—such as he believed the Apostle would have delivered, had he been still alive. His first page is a wonderful mosaic of phrases from the genuine Paulines, most carefully and skillfully fitted together. As he proceeds, and the necessity arises to make the Apostle speak still more clearly and directly to the heart and to the condition of this new time, he begins to compose more freely, and in doing so falls inevitably out of the Pauline style and phraseology into his own looser,
less nervous, and less rugged style, and into the current vocabulary of his own day.

In all this he was not conscious of misrepresenting the Apostle in any way; he was not consciously deceiving anybody; it is not, indeed, necessary to suppose that he did deceive anybody. It seems far more probable that those to whom, in the first instance, he showed the result of his efforts, must have been perfectly well aware of what he had done. It is not to be supposed that he made any attempt to impose upon his friends, by inscribing his epistles on old and worn papyri or in old-fashioned writing! They went out for what they really were, and the warm appreciation with which the best minds in the Church received them, would not be tinged with any misunderstanding as to the way in which they had been written. Of course, they would then be copied and re-copied, and sent from church to church throughout the Christian world and,—in the absence of any footnotes, to explain the true facts of their origin; in the absence of books or papers, preserving a record of those facts; in the absence, further, of trained critical faculties, still more of any scientific apparatus, such as might have enabled the Christians of the last quarter of the second century to anticipate the conclusions of the twentieth century,—it was only natural that the true origin of these epistles should very soon be forgotten, and that they should come to be taken as being what, on the surface, they claim to be.

But if, on the other hand, we should feel obliged to say that the writer of these epistles wished and intended them to be read as authentic messages from the Apostle Paul himself, it still would not follow that we should be right in passing the same moral strictures upon his action as if he had been writing in the present day. A very different standard on these matters prevailed in those days. The theory of literary proprietorship was not held in anything remotely resembling its present form. It was a very common practice of ancient writers to appropriate, without any sort of acknowledgement, verses, sentences and whole paragraphs from any previous work they had before them. It was the custom of historians of the very front rank to put into the mouths of public men speeches of which they could not in the nature of things have had any verbatim report. It was not such a
very great step from the speeches ascribed to St. Paul in the Acts, to the composition of letters in his name. In both cases the author believed himself to begiving a true representation, as far as it was in his power, of the sentiments and teaching of the Apostle. In neither case should we be justified in dismissing that representation as purely fictitious (see Moffatt, H. N. T., p. 622 ff.).

(4) The use of the word Pastoral in connexion with the Epistles to Timothy and Titus goes back at least as far as Thomas Aquinas († 1274), who says in his commentary (Opera, ed. Fretté, Paris, 1876, p. 454), 'est haec epistola quasi pastoralis regula, quam Apostolus tradit Timotheo, instruens de omnibus quae spectant ad regimen praelatorum'; and again in the Prologus in 2 Tim. (p. 502), 'in prima enim (epistola) instruit eum de ordinatione ecclesiastica, in hac autem secunda agit de sollicitudine tanta pastorali ut etiam martyrium sustineat pro cura gregis'.

In 1703 D. N. Berdot (Exercitatio theol. exegetica in ep. S. Pauli ad Titum, Halae, p. 3f.) after quoting Augustine to the effect that those destined for the ministry ought to have Paul's epistles to Timothy and Titus constantly before his eyes, 'utpote quae de Pastoris Ministerii partibus agant', goes on to say of Titus 'in hac itaque Epistola, quae Pastoralis est, primo ostendit, qualis Minister sit eligendus . . . secundo quid et quomodo docere debeat'.

But the modern application of this term to these epistles collectively as a technical designation is rightly traced by Zahn (Einl. N. T. 1906, i. 447 n.) to a course of lectures delivered at the University of Halle in 1726–7 by Paul Anton, and edited in 1753–5 by J. A. Maier under the title Exegetische Abhandlung der Pastoral-Briefe Pauli an Timotheum und Titum.

As a matter of fact, Anton himself does not seem to have thought of limiting the word Pastoral in this special way. He describes his own lectures as 'Lectiones Pastorales on the Pauline epistles, and especially those to Timothy and Titus'. Starting from the large number of Pastoralia produced, since the Reformation, within 'our Evangelical Church', he shows how essential an element these are to a right preparation for the Christian ministry, and insists that the 'sap and strength to use them aright' must be drawn from the word of God itself. In this connexion he

1 (4–5) An Excursus, not affecting the argument.
INTRODUCTORY

says that not only these three epistles, but also the seven epistolae apocalypticae or episcopales (Rev. ii, iii) are rightly to be described as Pastorals, in virtue of the divine guidance they contain for the leaders of Christian churches; and that, indeed, a great part of the Holy Scripture is in this sense a Pastoral. The title of the second volume runs *Exeg. Abhandlung der Paulinischen Pastoral-Briefe, samt einem Anhänge der Sieben Pastoral-Briefe Christi an die Sieben Gemeinden in Asia.* Our epistles are thus regarded by Anton as *Pastoralia Scripta par excellens,* as the classical and supreme examples of writings serviceable to those who seek preparation for, and guidance in, the Christian ministry.

In accordance with this view of their character, the term Pastoral seems to have won its way into general acceptance in Protestant Germany as their recognized title and common designation, during the quarter of a century which intervened between the delivery of Anton’s lectures and their publication by Maier, who refers to the usage and justifies it in his introductory pages (‘die Pastoral-Briefe Pauli, wie sie insgemein, und zwar mit Recht, genennet werden’). Michaelis speaks of the ‘so-called Pastorals’ in his *Einleitung,* 1777. Then in 1810 J. A. L. Wegscheider published his new translation and explanation of 1 Tim., as the first part of a larger work, *Die Pastoral-Briefe des Apostels Paulus,* in the preface of which he speaks of ‘die sämmtlichen sogenannten Pastoral-Briefe des Ap. Paulus’. In Eichhorn’s *Einleitung in das N. T.* (1812) they are called ‘Die drey Pastoral schreiben, zwey an Tim. u. eines an Tit.’ From that time onwards the usage has been general among Continental scholars, and at any rate since Alford’s *Greek Testament* (1849, 1884) in this country also.

The facts about its origin were quickly forgotten, even in Germany. So that in 1826 the learned Heydenreich (*Die Pastoral-Briefe Pauli*) could write that they have been so called ‘from the most ancient times’ (von uraltien Zeiten her, vol. i, p. 7), with reference to the fact that early Christian teachers were called Pastors, ποιμένας (Eph. iv. 11), after the prophets and teachers of the Jewish Church (Jer. ii. 8; Ezek. xxxiv. 2 f.), and like Jesus Himself (John x. 11 f.; 1 Pet. ii. 25; v. 4; Heb. xiii. 20).

With regard to the real fitness of this term as applied to our
epistles, opinions have been divided. ‘They are’, said the devout Maier, ‘a living mirror reflecting the right organization of an entire Christian community, in every sort of state and circumstance, and in all public and special happenings,—showing not only what is necessary and proper, but also what is with the help of Divine grace perfectly “practicable” and possible.’ ‘Taken all together, our records of the Ministry (Amtslauf) of Christ in the gospels, and of the Apostles in Acts and of their successors in the teaching office in these Pastorals and other apostolic epistles, provide us with all that we need with regard to the teaching office and the planting of a Christian community, for the blessed instruction and imitation of the entire Church till the end of time.’

On the other hand, Heydenreich’s acceptance of the term is much more qualified. ‘It is true,’ he says, ‘that in earlier times these writings were wrongly regarded as a complete set of Pastoral instructions, and supposed to contain a sort of compendium of the entire body of Pastoral Theology. As a matter of fact, (1) they neither include all the occupations and duties which fall to a teacher of Christianity, nor (2) do they go deeply into special and single details, nor (3) do they bind themselves to the systematic arrangement which we might well expect in a real pastoral instruction, but not in brief letters; (4) there is much in them that refers to purely local circumstances, and to conditions peculiar to the period when they were written; ... (5) They are not exclusively concerned with matters connected with the teaching office. Quite other matters only very remotely connected with the pastoral instructions are woven into these confidential communications from the Apostle to his disciple and friend.’ Nevertheless, he concludes that these epistles ought to be the handbook of every one who is, or expects to be, a teacher of religion. For here is to be found without fail a rich and open spring of teaching and exhortation (p. 8).

Zahn’s verdict is that it suits 1 Tim. and Titus to a certain extent, 2 Tim. not at all. Holtzmann (PB., p. 282 n.) remarks bluntly that ‘of real pastoral teaching, i.e. of the theory of the individual cure of souls, our epistles contain little or nothing’. Moffatt (H. N. T., 1901, p. 556 n.) goes still further. ‘The inadequate and misleading title “pastorals”, under which these writings,
INTRODUCTORY

have suffered for about ninety years, can only be retained (and used as seldom as possible) on the score of convenience."

That they really do not contain all that might be desired from the modern point of view, in writings destined to be for all time the classical handbook on the cure of souls, for Christian ministers, is obvious enough. It is equally obvious that no such destiny was contemplated for them by their author (cf. 1 Tim. iii. 14 f.).

(5) That these three epistles call for some common designation, as forming a class by themselves, was felt as early as the beginning of the seventeenth century, when they were known as the Pontifical epistles, as being addressed to Timothy 'Ephesino Primati' and Titus 'Cretensi' by their apostolic superior. (Operis Hierarchici, sive De Ecclesiastico Principatu, Libri iii, in quibus epist. tres B. Pauli Apostoli, quae Pontificiae vocari solent, commentariis illustrantur, autore P. Cosma Magaliona, Lugduni, 1609.) At the beginning of the eighteenth we find them referred to by D. N. Berdot (p. 13) as 'epistolae ministriales'.

(6) Common Elements and Characteristics. All three exhibit a close similarity, and to a remarkable degree identity, of contents and subject matter, of literary style, diction, vocabulary and grammatical peculiarities. All three name the Apostle Paul at the outset as their author, and are addressed to younger helpers of the Apostle, known to us otherwise from the pages of the N. T., and of the Pauline epistles in particular, as his close friends and intimate companions in travel and in service. These now appear as his legates and representatives, commissioned by him to superintend the life and organization of the churches, and to resist certain false teachers, whose pernicious doctrines bear the same characteristics whether at Ephesus or in Crete. For the true faith there is now substituted a morbid preoccupation with myths and speculations tending to wordy battles, strife and contention within the Church, and to mental degeneracy, loose living, and evil speaking, and finally to downright moral and spiritual ruin, in the individual. The representatives of this calamitous teaching are charged with the basest of motives,—the sordid greed of material profit which they hope to make, and are making, out of the gospel. They are to be opposed in each case
first by the resolute and courageous stand to be taken by the recipient of the letter, by his stern rebukes and relentless exposure of their presumptuous and hollow claims, and by his personal example of sober, pure and holy living; then by his loyal insistence on the wholesome doctrine committed to his charge; and thirdly by his careful zeal in carrying out the apostolic instructions for the guidance and organization of the Church, over which he is set in authority, more especially by seeing that the right sort of persons are associated with himself in the supremely vital task of handing on the sound apostolic doctrine. This sound doctrine is in each case conceived and presented as first and foremost Paul’s own message, entrusted to him, heralded by him. It is the Word, the faithful Word, the Word of God,—the sound or wholesome teaching,—conveying to all who receive it knowledge of the Truth. It is the message of salvation in Christ Jesus our Lord,—given to us through faith, by grace,—taking effect in a life of true piety, faith, and love here, and holding the promise of eternal life;—or life and immortality,—hereafter, at His appearing.

In each of these short epistles the necessity for good works is insisted upon some half-dozen times; and in each the point of this is found to consist partly in the importance of making a favourable impression on an outside world only too ready to ‘blaspheme’.

In addition to the number of Hapax Legomena and other non-Pauline words shared between two or more of the Pastorals (for which see Appendix I A, p. 137 f.), they are connected by a series of characteristic phrases which seem collectively to favour strongly the impression that, in their present form at any rate, they are the work of one mind, and that mind, another than Paul’s (Appendix II A, p. 166 f.).
PART II

UNPAULINE ELEMENTS

THE LINGUISTIC EVIDENCE.

Introductory.

When in the year 1807 Schleiermacher opened the Critical campaign against the authenticity of 1 Tim., he chose as the field for a first engagement with the forces ranged against him, the linguistic peculiarities of that epistle, and set in the forefront of his attack a great array of *Hapax Legomena*.

In his own less warlike metaphor, he found himself under the dire necessity of offering to his readers as the first course of their Critical banquet, no piquant hors-d’œuvre to whet their intellectual palate, but a dry list of words!¹

It is indeed far more as field-marshall² than as chef, that he shines in the present controversy. Few have relished the arduous lexical, grammatical, and statistical labour imposed on them by the form thus given to the inquiry from its outset. In every phase of the more than century-long conflict, to which the famous Sendschreiben, with the replies of Planck, Beckhaus, Wegscheider, &c., proved to be only a preliminary skirmish, there have been laments at so much counting,—not to say, discounting!—of *Hapax Legomena*; and the hope has been expressed fervently, but in vain, that we might now have heard the last of them.³ The fact remains that these elements in the vocabulary of the Pastorals which are foreign not only to the Paulines, but to the entire N. T., form an essential part of the evidence on which the final decision must inevitably be based. It was neither the perversity of genius nor mere

¹ *Sendschreiben an Gass*, p. 28 f.
³ Shaw, 1904, p. 439.
dialectical subtlety, which threw such emphasis upon them, but a true perception of their vital significance for the present issue. The process of collecting, sifting, and analysing these and other relevant linguistic data therefore still continues, and clearly must continue, until one side is compelled by sheer weight of evidence to quit the field, and a position of primary strategic importance in many and far-reaching issues, passes definitely into those hands to which it properly belongs.

Though not by any means the only, nor even the principal, ground on which subsequent critics, going beyond Schleiermacher, have rejected the Pauline authorship of all three Pastorals, the linguistic argument has all along been the one that has made the deepest impression on advocates of the contrary opinion; and it is at this point that these have expended the greatest pains and energy in its defence.

From a long line of workers in this department to whom we are indebted for positive information, or fruitful suggestion, we single out, on the Conservative side, Koelling 1882–7, Bertrand 1888, Workman 1896, Rüegg 1893, Findlay 1903, Wohlenberg 1906, Jacquier 1907, Robert Scott 1909, N. J. D. White 1910, Torm 1919, Parry 1920. Among the Liberals we name here only Mayerhof 1838, and H. J. Holtzmann 1880, from whose armoury many a critic has, in the interval, drawn some of his most effective weapons.

Though it is now forty years since the last-named scholar published his monograph on the Pastoral Epistles, that epoch-making work still holds the field as a classical statement of the case against the Pauline authorship of these epistles, and of the reasons for placing them in the second century. On the other hand it is now generally considered, even among those who find his main thesis unanswerable and decisive, that Holtzmann’s own verdict requires revision in various details, and on at least one vital point. He failed to see in its true significance the fact that the language of certain passages in 2 Tim. and Titus, as well as their substance, unlike the rest of these epistles, is thoroughly Pauline in every respect. And so he made the mistake of dismissing these Personalia as mere fiction invented by the auctor ad Timotheum et Titum to lend colour and verisimilitude to his handiwork, on the basis of data found by him in Acts, the
genuine Paulines, and a few scraps of second-century tradition. See Part III, Chapter II, pp. 93 ff.

The present essay represents one more attempt to marshal the relevant facts, and set them in such a light that the secret of their true explanation may be revealed. It is based first on some acquaintance with the work of previous investigators; but in the main on an entirely new and independent examination of the language (1) of the Pastorals, (2) of Paul and other N. T. writers, (3) of those second-century writers who belonged to the second and third generations after Paul's death, but were, on the 'critical' view, contemporaries of our author.

To a certain extent the effect of what follows is simply to exhibit from a fresh point of view facts that have long been known and frequently been pointed out. But much is here made public, so far as the present writer is aware, for the first time, and has to be added, for whatever it may be worth, to the already formidable mass of evidence which cannot easily, if it can possibly, be reconciled with the traditional opinion.

I. 1. THE VOCABULARY OF THE PASTORAL EPISTLES AND OF PAUL

The vocabulary of the Pastorals consists of some 902 words, of which 54 are proper names. Of the remaining 848, 306 or over 36 per cent. are not to be found in any one of the ten Paulines. See Appendix I, pp. 137 ff.

A 1. One hundred and seventy-five, the so-called 'Pastoral Hapax Legomena', appear in no other N. T. writing outside the Pastorals. Of these 1 Tim. has 96, that is 15·2 per page, 2 Tim. 60 or 12·9 per page, and Titus 43 or 16·1 per page.

Now Rom. has only four such words to the page, 1 Cor. 4·1, 2 Cor. 5·6, Gal. 3·9, Eph. 4·6, Phil. 6·2, Col. 5·5, 1 Thess. 3·6, 2 Thess. 3·3, and Philem. 4.

We are thus presented with a gradually ascending scale, approximating, though by no means exactly, to the chronological order, the maximum difference, between the two extremes, 2 Thess. and Phil., being 2·9 per page, and the intermediate stages, from 2 Thess. to 1 Thess. 0·3, Gal. 0·3, Phillem. 0·1, Rom. 0, 1 Cor. 0·1, Eph. 0·5, Col. 0·9, 2 Cor. 0·1, Phil. 0·6,—in no single case so much as a word per page. Then comes 1 Tim.
with an increase over Paul’s previous record, of 9 per page, 2 Tim. with an increase of 6·7, or else Titus with an increase of 9·9 per page. The gap between the lowest of the Pastorals and the highest of the Paulines would hold the entire series from Thess. to Phil. more than twice over. Even if we allow the

Pastorals to help one another, by eliminating all words shared by them with each other, they still refuse to be brought anywhere near the other ten epistles. But as they are all under a common suspicion, the number of such words rather strengthens than mitigates the case against them. See Diagram I.

A 2. One hundred and thirty-one words occur in the Pastorals and in other N. T. books, but not in any Pauline epistle. Of these 1 Tim. has 77, 2 Tim. 54, and Titus 38.1 Sixty-one are shared with one N. T. author exclusively, viz. 3 with Matt., 2 with

1 Appendix I A 2, p. 138 f.
Mark, 29 with one or both of the Lucan writings, 3 with John, 10 with Heb., 4 with 1 Pet., 7 (or?) with 2 Pet., 2 with Jas., and one with Rev. See Appendix I D, p. 148 ff.

Taking A 1 and 2 together, we find that 1 Tim. has 173 (out of 529) words that do not appear in any of the ten Paulines, that is one in three of its total vocabulary, or 27·3 per page, 2 Tim. 114 out of 413, or 27·3 per page, Titus 81 out of 293, or 30·4 per page.

In Rom. we find 261 words which do not recur in any other of the ten Paulines, or 10 to the page of Westcott and Hort, in 1 Cor. 11·1, in 2 Cor. 12, in Gal. 10·3, in Eph. 10·6, in Phil. 12·7, in Col. 9·7, in 1 Thess. 7·5, in 2 Thess. 8·7, and in Philem. 8 per page.

So here again we have a closely connected series, beginning with the earliest, 1 Thess., and moving by very easy stages of less than a word per page, till we come to the latest, Phil., which has, in proportion to its length, the largest number of such words. The maximum difference, between the first and the last member of this series, amounts to 5·2 per page, representing the actual 'development', or the extreme limits of variation, in Paul's working vocabulary in this respect, during the last eleven years or so of his recorded ministry, by the end of which he was an elderly man (Philem. 9). The intermediate stages are:—from 1 Thess. to Philem. 0·5, 2 Thess. 0·7, Col. 1, Rom. 0·3, Gal. 0·3, Eph. 0·3, 1 Cor. 0·5, 2 Cor. 0·9, Phil. 0·7.

We turn back now to the Pastorals, and find an increase over Phil. of 14·6 in 1 Tim., 11·7 in 2 Tim., 17·7 in Titus. This sudden and drastic interruption of a sequence hitherto so orderly is, if possible, even more arresting than the great gap of 22·9 words per page between 1 Thess. and Titus. (See Diagram II.)

The line A A follows, from 1 Thess. to Phil., a perfectly normal, easy, gradual curve, with an upward trend, and there is nothing whatever to suggest a doubt as to the common origin with the rest of any member in the series. But at this point it is not enough to say that the line bends suddenly at a sharp angle. It breaks off abruptly. And the Pastorals are represented by a different line altogether, on quite a new plane.

Thus the ten Paulines are seen to form a distinct group by themselves. And the Pastorals stand right outside that group
Diagram II

Number of words, per page, not found elsewhere, A in the ten Paulines - B in the thirteen epistles.

A in the ten Paulines, B in the thirteen epistles.
at such a distance as to create at once very serious doubts indeed, regarding the hypothesis of their common authorship with the rest.

In the same Diagram the second curve B B shows the result of eliminating in each case all words shared with one or more of the Pastorals, though with no Pauline epistle. From 1 Thess. to Phil. the two lines A A and B B run virtually parallel (with the slight exception that in Col. they come nearer than the average by something less than a word per page).

Now this is precisely what we might have anticipated in a writer who had them all ten before him, and had studied them with impartial reverence as the testament of his Apostle. But if they were really written by Paul himself some years after Phil., we should rather have expected to find in them a distinctly closer affinity with the later epistles.

When we come to the Pastorals themselves, the two lines spring violently apart; and the distance between them here is the measure of those linguistic elements which they share with one another, but with no Pauline epistle.

B. Words found in the Pastorals and also in Paul. The total number of words shared by the Pastorals with one or more of the ten Paulines is 542.

B I. Fifty of these may be described as exclusively Pauline, in the sense that they do not appear in the other books of the N. T. That is 3·7 per page of the Pastorals, or 7·9 per cent. of the 632 such words occurring in the Paulines.

Of these 50, only 7 occur in more than 1 of the Pastorals, and only 1 (ἐπιφάνεια) in all three; 30 in only one of the Paulines, 10 more in only two; 3 occur in five epistles,—viz, ἔρις, μνεία, χρηστότης; 2 (ἀλοάω, σωρεύω) occur in Paul himself only in quotations from the LXX. Only 3 (ἀφθαρσία, οἰκέω, χρηστότης) occur more than twice in any Pauline. Of the handful which, rare as they are, may fairly be called distinctively or characteristicly Pauline, practically the whole number form an integral part of phrases which could have been, and on our theory were, taken over bodily by our author from the Pauline epistles before him. See p. 90.

There is thus no sort of counterweight here to set against the great mass of facts which tell against the Pauline authorship of these epistles. (Further than this we do not need to go; and
Number of words, per page, not found elsewhere in the ten Paulines, including repetitions. A. eliminating from 2 Tim. and Tit. the genuine fragments. B. taking 2 Tim. and Tit complete.

Diagram III

A. eliminating from 2 Tim. and Tit. the genuine fragments. B. taking 2 Tim. and Tit complete.
indeed must not, considering the small number of words in this class (113) shared by the ten Paulines themselves with one another,—from 1-8 per page in 1 Cor. to 4-8 in Col.)

B. There remain 492 words which are found in the Pastorals and in Paul and in other books of the N. T.

(a) This figure includes of course a large number of those commonest nouns, verbs, prepositions, &c., without which it would be, as Holtzmann says, impossible to write at all; or else those universal Christian terms indisputable to any Christian writer, and distinctive of none. We count over 230 which occur in at least seven N. T. books other than the Pauline epistles, many of them in every book of the N. T., and nearly 60 more which are found in at least five.

To this category belongs every one of the 47 words which appear in all ten Pauline epistles. Neither singly nor collectively does the presence of words like ἀδελφός, ἀγάπη, γνώμαι, εἰδέναι, εἰμί, εἰρήνη, ἔχω, εὐαγγέλιον, θεός, λέγω, πᾶς, κύριος, πατήρ, πίστις, πνεῦμα, ποιεῖ, χάρις, ἐκκλησία, πάντοτε, οὖν, ὑπέρ (gen.), ἀλλά, ἀπό, αὐτός, γάρ, δέ, διά, ήμείς, εἰ, εἰς, ἐν, ἐπί, ἦ, ἦν, καὶ, μετά, νῦν, ὦ, ὦ, ὃτι, οὐ, οὖ, οὗτος, περί, πρός, τις, ὑμεῖς, ὑς, weigh so much as dust in the balance in favour of the Pauline authorship of any writing in which they occur.

The same may be said of all the 30 shared with 9 epistles, and the 25 shared with 8, as well as the 45 or so prepositions beyond those already mentioned.

(b) Then there are a great many of the most frequent and characteristic Pauline terms which occur, it is true, in the Pastorals, but only once in one of them, and not at all in the other two.1 There is more in this fact than meets the eye at

---

1 Only once in 1 Tim., and not in either of the others, we find 66 words, including νόμος (twice together; but 118 times in 5 Pauline epistles), σάρξ (89 times in 8 epistles), γνώσις (22 times in 6), γράφω (62 in 8), δοκιμάζω 16/7, παράκλησις 19/7, προσεύχομαι 17/7, καθός 75/9. Ἐκκλησία, which appears 59 times and in all ten Paulines, is found thrice in 1 Tim., but not at all in either 2 Tim. or Titus.

Only once, in 2 Tim., we find 53 Pauline words, including ἤγείρω 39/8, ζητέω 20/7, εἰρίσκω (bis) 14/5, δάνας 44/5, καρπός 10/5, λογίζομαι 32/5, πληρώ 22/7, χαρᾶ 21/7, οὗτος 72/9, πάντοτε 26/10, ὑπὸ with genitive 46/9. In addition to which, the following are entirely absent from 1 Tim. and Titus, ἀγαπῶ 29/8, γνώσις 46/8, δύναμις 45/9, θελήμα 22/7, κεκράσ 42/8, μὲν 60/8.

Only once, in Titus, 37 Pauline words, including ἀλλήλων 39/9, ἔξουσία 26/6, πέπω 14/8, περιτομή 29/6, ποτὲ 19/8, τοιοῦτος 31/8.
first. For, as we shall show later on (pp. 90, 97), a great many of these very words make their solitary appearance in the Pastorals precisely in those passages the Pauline authorship of which is not denied, but is on the contrary strongly affirmed as an essential feature of the ‘critical’ theory, as stated, e.g., in our introductory chapter, pp. 5–13. That is, they are contained either (1) in the phrases taken bodily, as we think, from the genuine epistles, or else (2) in the Personalia incorporated in 2 Tim. and Titus, mainly at the end of these epistles.

(c) Further this common vocabulary of Paul and the Pastorals is subject to a heavy discount in respect of the numerous words which carry a totally different meaning in the Pastorals from that which Paul gives them, or are used in a radically different way.

Thus ἀναλαμβάνω 1 Tim. iii. 16 of the Assumption, but in Paul = take up (spiritual weapons or armour, Eph. vi. 13, 16); ἀντέχομαι Titus i. 9 = hold fast (the faithful word), 1 Thess. v. 14 = support, aid, care for (needy members of the Church); γράμματα 2 Tim. iii. 15 = the sacred writings of the O. T., or, if we believe Holtzmann, theological study, exegesis of the O. T. text by discovery of the meaning hidden behind the letters—in any case, in a distinctly good sense; in Paul, γράμμα, always in a bad sense = the mere letter of the law, ‘in a disparaging sense, as a hindrance to true religion’ (Thayer, s. v.), Rom. ii. 27, 29, vii. 6, 2 Cor. iii. 6 f.; ἐπαγγέλλομαι 1 Tim. ii. 10, vi. 21 = profess, make a profession of, in Paul always of the Divine promises, Rom. iv. 21, Gal. iii. 19; ἐπέχω (sc. τ. νοῦν) 1 Tim. iv. 16 = take heed, Phil. ii. 16 = hold forth, hold towards as a light (Thayer); καθίστημι Titus i. 5 = appoint to office (act.), Rom. v. 19 = (pass.) be made, set down, constituted (sisto) i. q. declare, show to be (Thayer); κοινὸς Titus i. 4 = communis in good sense, of the general, universal faith of the Church, Rom. xiv. 14 = levitically unclean; μακάριος applied to God, 1 Tim. i. 11, vi. 15, never so in Paul, Rom. iv. 7 f., xiv. 22, 1 Cor. vii. 40; μύρρῳς 2 Tim. iii. 5 = mere form, semblance, in bad sense, Rom. ii. 20 = the form befitting the thing, or truly expressing the fact, the very form (Thayer), in good sense; ὁποῖς (θεοῦ) 1 Tim. iii. 15 = the Church, in Paul always of human dwellings, especially the private house in which a local church meets, never of ‘God’s House’, Rom. xvi. 5,
Cor. xvi. 19, Col. iv. 15; παρατίθημι 2 Tim. ii. 2 = commit, entrust, to be religiously kept and taught to others (Thayer), in Paul only 1 Cor. x. 27 = set before, of food placed on a table; προσδέχομαι Titus ii. 13 = look for (the blessed hope), in Paul = welcome, of reception given to visiting saints, Rom. xvi. 2; Phil. ii. 29; πληροφορέω 2 Tim. iv. 5, 17 = fulfil one's ministry, or the Word, cause it to be shown to the full, in Paul always passive, = be convinced or persuaded, Rom. iv. 21, Col. iv. 12 (cf. 17); υποτίθημι 1 Tim. iv. 6 = put in mind of, Rom. xvi. 4 = lay down, risk (one's neck).

It is not of course to be expected of any author that he should invariably use every word in exactly the same sense. Paul himself, as well as the writer of these epistles, uses some words differently in different contexts. It is a question of degree as well as of kind. And it can hardly be denied that the instances given—and they might be considerably augmented—constitute no small difficulty in the way of assigning both groups of epistles to the same author.

(d) Conversely we are confronted with a series of passages in which Paul and the author of the Pastorals both say the same thing, but in different words. And once again we have to judge whether the instances, studied in detail and collectively, are favourable to, or even compatible with, unity of authorship. Thus in 1 Tim. iv. 12 Paul tells Timothy to let no one despise his youth, καταφρονεῖν, cf. Titus ii. 15 περιφρονεῖν. Now it happens that the real Paul had occasion to warn the Corinthians against exactly the same possibility, and with reference to this same Timothy. But although he knew the word καταφρονέω and used it in other contexts, Rom. ii. 4, 1 Cor. xi. 22, he did not use it, but εξουθενέω, on this occasion—εὰν δὲ ἐλθῇ Τιμόθεος, βλέπετε ἵνα ἄφοβος γένηται πρὸς ὑμᾶς . . . μὴ τις οὖν αὐτὸν εξουθένησῃ (1 Cor. xvi. 10). In 1 Tim. iv 12 we have the series ἐν λόγῳ . . . ἐν ἀγάπῃ . . . ἐν ἀγνείᾳ . . . , which corresponds with 2 Cor. vi 6 f., ἐν ἀγνώστητι . . . ἐν ἀγάπῃ . . . ἐν λόγῳ . . . , except that for the Pauline ἀγνώστης (cf. 2 Cor. xi. 3) is substituted ἀγνεία—a word foreign not only to Paul, but to the rest of the N.T., but very common in the Apostolic Fathers, whereas ἀγνώστης occurs in these only twice, in Hermas.

In expressing his thankfulness to God, Paul consistently uses
the word ἐνχαριστέω (Rom. i. 8, i Cor. i. 4, 2 Cor. i. 11, Eph. i. 16, v. 20, Phil. i. 3, Col. i. 3, i Thess. ii. 2, 2 Thess. iii. 2, ii. 13, Philem. 4); this author never writes that word, but uses instead the Latinism χάριν ἐχω (= gratiam habeo) i Tim. i. 12, 2 Tim. i. 3. For the Pauline διό (27 times in 8 epistles) he substitutes δι' ἥν αἰτιαν (= quam ob causam) 2 Tim. i. 6, 12, Titus i. 13. Where Paul falls back on periphrases like εἰς ἑτερον εὐαγγέλιον μετατιθέναι, τὰ ψηλὰ φρονεῖν, τὰ ἐαντίς τέκνα θάλπειν, we now find the compounds ἑτεροδιδασκαλεῖν, ψηλοφρονεῖν, τεκνοτροφεῖν, of which the two first do not occur in extant literature till the second century. Instead of Paul's ἄμωμος or ἄμεμπτος, we find ἀνεπληπτος, instead of ἀπὸ πατέρων, ἀπὸ προγόνων.

The expected coming of the Lord was bound to have a large place in the thoughts of any Pauline Christian; but the regular word for it in these epistles is ἐπιφάνεια (elsewhere in the N. T. only 2 Thess. ii. 8, τ. ἐπιφανεὶα τῆς παρουσίας αὐτοῦ, but found in 2 Clement xii. i, xvii. 4, Justin, Apol. xiv. 3, xl. i, Dial. xxii. 3, i Tim. vi. 14, 2 Tim. i. 10, iv. i. 8, Titus ii. 13), whereas Paul's word is παρουσία, i Cor. xv. 23, i Thess. ii. 19, iii. 13, iv. 15, 2 Thess. ii. 1, or ἀποκάλυψις, i Cor. i. 7, 2 Thess. i. 7, neither of which occurs in the Pastorals; while the act or state of expectation is expressed by the verb προσδέχομαι instead of the Pauline ἀπεκδέχομαι, Titus ii. 13 προσδέχομαι τήν . . . ἐπιφάνειαν τῆς δόξης τοῦ μεγάλου θεοῦ, cf. i Cor. i. 7 ἀπεκδέχομένους τήν ἀποκάλυψιν τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν, Rom. viii. 19, Phil. iii. 20. Paul, as we have seen, uses προσδέχομαι to express quite another idea. Again the Paul of the Pastorals, as of the other epistles, makes mention of his friends in his prayers, but the former expresses this by μνείαν ἐχω, 2 Tim. i. 3, which the real Paul uses in the general sense of holding in remembrance, i Thess. iii. 6, while for the special sense of remembering in prayer he invariably says μνείαν ποιοῦμαι Rom. i. 10, Eph. i. 16, i Thess. ii. 2, Phil. i. 3, Philem. 4. Both writers know of people whose very conscience has become defiled, but the writer of the Pastorals prefers μιαῖνω (14 times in Hermas, e.g. Man. v. 1. 6, 7. 2, cf. Justin, Dial. xxii. 4, Aristeides, Apol. iv. 3, v. 1, xii. 1) to the Pauline μολόνω, Titus i. 15, μεμίανται αὐτῶν καὶ οἱ νοῦς καὶ ἡ συνείδησις, i Cor. viii. 7, ἡ συνείδησις αὐτῶν . . . μολύνται. The masters whom slaves are exhorted to obey are
δεσπόται in these epistles (as e.g. in Hermas, Sim. v. 2. 8, 9), κύριοι in the Paulines, and the obedience enjoined is ὑποτάσσεσθαι in the former, but ὑπακοέων in the latter, Titus ii. 9, cf. Col. iii. 22, Eph. vi. 5 f. For further instances, see Holtzmann P. B., pp. 105, 107.

C. It now remains to consider those elements in the Pauline vocabulary which are conspicuous by their absence from the Pastorals. The total number is 103 proper names and 1,635 other words, of which 582 are peculiar to Paul, and 1,053 occur also in other books of the N. T.

C 1. Of these 582 exclusively Pauline words, 469 occur in one epistle only, and have already been dealt with. The 113 found in more than one epistle include a majority used by Paul himself not more than twice or three times. Twenty-one occur in three epistles, ἀγιωσύνη, ἀνήκω, δοκιμή, ἐνδείξεις, ἔξαγοράζω, ἐπιβαρέω, εὐσχημόνως, εὐωδία, κάμπτω, μετασχηματίζω, μόχθος, πάθος, πεποίθησις, προλέγω, συναιχμάλωτος, νίοθεσία, φιλοτιμεόμαι, (in 3 Homologoumena) θυτός, καταλλάσσω, κλίμα, φύραμα. Eight occur in 4 epistles, ἀγαθοσύνη, ἀπείμι, ἀπλότης, εἰκῆ, εἴπερ, ἐνέργεια, κενῶ, υπερβολή. Though the aggregate number of these distinctively Pauline words is certainly considerable, it cannot be said that their absence from the Pastorals presents any serious difficulty for those who maintain the Pauline authorship, but only that there is still less difficulty here for the other side. See however below, p. 74 f.

C 2. There remain the 1,053 Pauline words, to be found in other N. T. books, but not in the Pastorals. Five hundred and thirty-two of these appear in more than one epistle. We select from these first (a) a number of the most frequent and characteristic terms in the Pauline vocabulary.
C. Pauline Words wanting in the Pastorals.

C 1. Not elsewhere in the N. T., but in four Pauline Epistles:—
άγαθωσύνη, ἀπειμ, ἀπλότης, εἰκή, εἴπερ, ἐνέργεια, κενώ, ὑπερβολή.

C 2. In other N. T. books, and in five Pauline Epistles:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Words</th>
<th>Rom.</th>
<th>1 Cor.</th>
<th>2 Cor.</th>
<th>Gal.</th>
<th>Eph.</th>
<th>Phil.</th>
<th>Col.</th>
<th>1 Thess.</th>
<th>2 Thess.</th>
<th>Philem.</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>αδικεω</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αιμα</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ακροβυστια</td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αλλος</td>
<td></td>
<td>23</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αναγκη</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αξιος</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ασιθενης</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δειδος</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διαθηκη</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δοξιω</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ελευθερος</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εξερχομαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εξουθενεω</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>επαινοι</td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ερω</td>
<td></td>
<td>13</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ευλογια</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζηλος</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>θυμος</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καταλαμβανω</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καταφεροι</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κατεργαισμαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καυχημα</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κκοσος</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μερος</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μνημοι</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>νουθετω</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παλαις</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παραπτωμα</td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παρουσια</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πλεονεξω</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πλεονεξεω</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πληρωμα</td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πνευματικος</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σοφια</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σταυρος</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τελειως</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τρεχω</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>υποκοου</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>υπαρχω</td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>υστερμα</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>φθειομαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Carried forward: 100 134 67 41

|     | 39 | 24 | 33 | 21 | 10 | 2 | 471 |

C. Pauline Words wanting in the Pastorals.
C. Pauline Words wanting in the Pastorals (continued).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Words wanting in the Pastorals</th>
<th>Brought forward</th>
<th>In six Epistles</th>
<th>In seven Epistles</th>
<th>In eight Epistles</th>
<th>In nine Epistles</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἀκιθαραγία</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποκαλέσθω</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποκάλυψις</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιστολή</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εἰσαγγελίζομεν</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐθνηρός</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κατέχω</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καυσόμοια</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοινωνία</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μέσος</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὑφείλω</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>παραλαμβάνω</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πορνεία</td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρίσπαπον</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σκότος</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>στήκω</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>φρονέω</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>χαίρω</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὁρα</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀποθυνήσκω</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Βλέπω</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>γνωρίζω</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ενδίω</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εὐδοκίω</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κενός</td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>περισσεύω</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>10</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πράσσω</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνεργός</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ψυχή</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δέχομαι</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐργάζομαι</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>θλίψις</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σῶμα</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>νῦς</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>χαρίζομαι</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνεργεῖω</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐχαριστεῖω</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὖρλονός</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πεπτεῖω</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals</td>
<td>244</td>
<td>283</td>
<td>206</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>102</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
OF THE PASTORALS

Nor is it only single Pauline terms, however numerous, the absence of which makes itself felt in reading the Pastorals, but whole groups of such words derived from a common root: e.g. ἐνέργεια, ἐνέργεω, ἐνέργημα, ἐνέργης, one or other of which occurs 28 times and in all 10 epistles; also συνεργεω, συνεργὸς 14 times in 6 epistles, and ἐργάζομαι, κατεργάζομαι 38 in 9; εὐδοκέω, εὐδοκία, 17 in 9; περίσσευμα, περισσεύω, περισσός, περισσότερος, περισσότερως, 48/8; καυχᾶμαι, καυχημα, καυχησις, κατακαυχᾶμαι, 52/7; ὄφειλής, ὄφειλή, ὄφειλμα, ὄφείλω, ὄφελον, ὄφελος, 25/7; σταύρος, σταυρός, συνσταυρῶ, 20/7; ἐλευθερία, ἐλευθερώα, ἐλευθερος, ἀπελευθερος, 29/6; πράγμα, πράξις, πράσσω, 25/7; πλεονεκτέω, πλεονέκτης, πλεονεξία, 16/6; σκοτίζομαι, σκοτῶμαι, σκότος, 14/6; σοφία, σοφός, 44/5; ταπεινῶ, ταπείνωσις, ταπεινοφροσύνη, 13/5; τέλειος, τελειότης, τελειώδης, τελείῳ, 10/5; ἐπανέω, ἐπανών, 13/5; εὐλογέω, εὐλογητός, εὐλογία, 19/5; κενός, κενῶ, 18/8; μερίζω, μερίς, μέρος, 25/5; πνευματικός, πνευματικῶς, 23/5; ἀναγκάζω, ἀναγκιή, 13/6; ὠστερέω, ὠστέρημα, ὠστέρησις, 16/5; υἱός, υἱοθεσία, 46/8; ἀποκαλύπτω, ἀποκάλυψις, 26/7; ψυχή, ψυχικός, 17/7; λυπέω, λυπή, 22/5; φθαρτός, φθέρω, φθορά, 14/6; φρονέω, παραφρονέω, ὑπερφρονέω, φρονήμα, φρονήσις, φρόνιμος, 34/7 (on the other hand we find in the Pastorals, but not in Paul, περιφρονέω, φροντίζω, ύψηλοφρονέω).

Now it goes without saying that the mere absence of any one, or any half-dozen, of these words from an epistle counts for very little indeed in this connexion. No writer can be required to use the whole body even of his own favourite expressions every time he puts pen to paper. It is always open to defenders of the Pauline authorship to say that the Apostle used the words that he wanted to express his meaning at the moment, and that the absence of any number of his usual expressions is due simply to the fact that he had no need for them in the present instance. But—apart from the fact already noted, that in these epistles there are plenty of passages, where a Pauline term would have come in admirably, but where we find instead some expression foreign to Paul’s other writings—there must obviously be some limit here. And the whole contention at this stage is that, taken in the mass, as well as in detail, the omission of so very much that is most constant and characteristic in the Pauline terminology constitutes a very serious objection indeed to our acceptance of
the Pauline authorship of these epistles. Not only does it go far and away beyond anything for which the variations in the ten Paulines had prepared us; it implies a change of perspective, a shifting of horizons, a profound modification of the whole mental and spiritual outlook for which two or three, or even five years would hardly be sufficient in any man, least of all an old man, and such a one as this Paul the aged, with such deep-rooted conceptions, and so definite a system of thought and expression as we know him to have reached, for all his receptivity and versatility. See Diagram IV.

### Diagram IV

**Numbers of words per page, including repetitions, which occur in at least five Pauline epistles, but not in any one of the three Pastorals**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>RO</th>
<th>EPH</th>
<th>1 Th</th>
<th>PHM</th>
<th>GAL</th>
<th>COL.</th>
<th>2 Th</th>
<th>2 Cor</th>
<th>1 Cor</th>
<th>PHP</th>
<th>PAUL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**The Missing Particles.**

(6) But we must now refer to another series of omissions, which is if possible still more striking and significant—the long string of Pauline particles, enclitics, prepositions, pronouns, &c., for which we look in vain in these epistles. Not only are the stones used by this builder of a different shape and substance from those of the Paulines, the very clamps and mortar that hold them together are different too. Holtzmann mentioned (PB., p. 101) a couple of dozen or so of these, but the facts go far beyond anything that he or any one else has yet stated. In the table on pp. 36–7 there will be found a list of such words, showing the

---

1 See p. 32.  
2 p. 37.
number of times that each occurs in the Pauline epistles singly and collectively. It is not suggested, of course, that the Apostle was under any obligation to use any one of these every time he wrote. But let any reader fully observe the facts here given in the mass, reflect on the evidence now produced touching Paul's habitual modes of thought and expression, and then consider the balance of probability against such a contingency as the traditional theory requires us to accept—viz. that within a very few years we should find the same writer producing three epistles without once happening to use a single word in all that list—

one or other of which has hitherto appeared on the average nine times to every page that Paul ever wrote.

It is certain that nothing to approach this list can be produced in the case of any Pauline epistle. Of the 112 Pauline particles, &c., on this page, Rom. has 58, 1 Cor. 69, 2 Cor. 53, Gal. 43, Eph. 22, Phil. 29, Col. 18, 1 Thess. 27, 2 Thess. 12, and even Philem. in its page and a quarter has 12. But we have to take into account not only the occurrence of such terms, but their frequent recurrence. One or other of these words appears in Eph. 38 times, or 4.3 per page, in 2 Thess. 15 or 5 per page,
Pauline Particles, Prepositions, Pronouns, &c., wanting in the Pastorals.

**In one epistle:**—C. 1. Not elsewhere in the N. T.: Rom. ἥτοι.—1 Cor. διότερ 2, μήτις, ὅ, ὥσπερε.—2 Cor. ἡμικα 2, ὑπερλίαν 2.  C. 2. In other N. T. books:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>In one Epistle</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; incl. repetitions</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In two Epistles:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. 1 ὑπερεκπερσωσοῦ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tάχα</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. 2 δίς</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνεκεν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπειδῆ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἑφάπαξ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἡμίκος</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καθό</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κάν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κατέναντι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κατενότιον</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μενοῦγε</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὁμοίως</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὡς</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὁ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὖθεσ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὔπο</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πάντως</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ποὺ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σύς</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τοσούτος</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τολύντιον</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὁδε</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In three Epistles:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνω</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπαξ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐν (= ἐστι)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπεί</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπειτα</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκ (prep.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὁποῖος</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὅποι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὅφελον</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πλή</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πόσος</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ποὐ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In four Epistles:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀρτι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διότι</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐμπροσθεν</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἔξω</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἢσο</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴδου</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total words</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; repetitions</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>In four Eps. (ctd.)</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C.  2 καθώς</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C.  1 εἰκόν</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>In five Epistles</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C.  2 ἀντί</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C.  1 εἶπερ</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>In six Epistles</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀν...</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>In seven Epistles</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀρα...</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>In eight Epistles</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>διά...</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>In nine Epistles</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκατόν</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total words</strong></td>
<td>58</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>&quot; repetitns.</strong></td>
<td>187</td>
<td>288</td>
<td>163</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>In at least five Epp. including rep.</strong></td>
<td>116</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Diag. V.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Diag. IV.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
LINGUISTIC PECULIARITIES

in Col. 31 or 5.2 per page, in Rom. 187 or 7.2 per page, Phil. 54 or 9 per page, in 1 Thess. 51 or 9.3 per page, in 2 Cor. 163 or 9.9 per page, in Gal. 89 = 10.8 per page, in 1 Cor. 288 = 12 per page, and in Philem. 16 = 12.8 per page. The total number of occurrences for the whole ten epistles is 932, or on the average 8.9 per page. See Diagram V, p. 35.

Nor is it possible to redress the balance by referring to the 77 Pauline particles, &c., which do appear in the Pastorals. For of these—

(1) Every one occurs also in the Apostolic Fathers, and in the Apologists, and the great majority in practically every book of the N.T.

(2) Thirty-six occur in all three Pastorals, of which all occur in Rom., all but one in 1 and 2 Cor., Eph., Phil., Gal., 33 in Col., 30 in 1 Thess., 31 in 2 Thess., and 30 even in Philem.!

(3) Of the remaining 41, 7 occur in only one Pauline, 17 in only one of the Pastorals, and 10 only once in the Pastorals.

2. GRAMMATICAL PECULIARITIES.

But the familiar Pauline particles are not by any means the only grammatical forms which by their absence create in our minds a sense of strangeness and unfamiliarity as often as we come to the Pastorals fresh from a careful study of the genuine Paulines.

1. In his use of the definite article our author betrays a noticeably different method of literary craftsmanship.

(i) The phrase ὅ μὲν . . . ὅ δὲ, which Paul finds so handy (cf. 1 Cor. vii. 7, Gal. iv. 23, Eph. iv. 11, Phil. i. 16), is not in these epistles.

(ii) Nor is the ὅ with nominative in place of a vocative which appears 9 times in Rom., 4 in Gal., 6 in Eph., 6 in Col., e.g. Rom. ii. ὅ ἀνθρωπε πᾶς ὁ κρίνων, Gal. iv. Ἀββᾶ ὅ πατήρ, Eph. v. 14 ἐγείρε ὅ καθεύδων.

(iii) Nor the ὅ with a numeral—cf. Rom. v. 17 τῷ τοῦ ἐνὸς παραπτώματι, 1 Cor. iv. 6, vi. 16, xiii. 13 τὰ τρία ταῦτα, xiv. 30 ὅ πρῶτος, xv. 5 τοῖς δώδεκα, 2 Cor. xiii. 2, Eph. ii. 15, v. 31, Phil. i. 23, 1 Thess. v. 11.

(iv) Nor the ὅ with an infinitive—34 times in Rom., 14 in 1 Cor., 18 in 2 Cor., 5 in Gal., 3 in Eph., 15 in Phil., 10 in
1 Thess., 7 in 2 Thess., e.g. Rom. i. 11 εἰς τὸ στηριχθῆναι ὕμας, Phil. i. 21 Ἑμοὶ γὰρ τὸ ἔθνον Χριστὸς καὶ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν κέρδος.1

(v) Nor the τοῦ with an infinitive—9 times in Rom., 3 in 1 Cor., 4 in 2 Cor., 3 in Gal., 2 in Phil., e.g. 1 Cor. ix. 10 ἐπ' ἑλπίζοντι τοῦ μετέχειν, Gal. ii. 12 πρὸ τοῦ γὰρ ἐλθεῖν.

(vi) Nor the δ with an adverb—Rom. i. 13 ἄρχρι τοῦ δεύρο, viii. 22, xiii. 9 f., xv. 2, vii. 29, 2 Cor. iv. 16, v. 16, x. 16, xi. 28, xiii. 2, Gal. v. 14, vi. 17 τοῦ λαούτου, Eph. ii. 17, iv. 25, vi. 10, Phil. i. 5 ἄρχρι τοῦ νῦν, iii. 14 τῆς ἀνω κλήσεως, iv. 8, Col. iii. 1 f., iv. 5, 9, 1 Thess. iv. 12, 2 Thess. iii. 1, cf. ix infra. (But cf. 1 Tim. iii. 7.)

(vii) Nor with an interjection—cf. 1 Cor. xiv. 16 ὑμῖν, 2 Cor. i. 17, 20 τὸ ναι καὶ τὸ οὐ.

(viii) Nor with a whole sentence—cf. Rom. viii. 26 τὸ γὰρ τὶ προσευξήμεθα καθὼ δεῖ οὖκ αἰδαμεν, xiii. 9 δίς, 1 Cor. iv. 6, Gal. v. 14 πεπληρωται εἰ τῷ Ἀγαπῆσεις τὸν πλησίον σου ὡς σεαυτόν, Eph. iv. 9 τὸ δὲ ἀνέβη τί ἐστιν εἰ μὴ ὦτι καὶ κατέβη, 1 Thess. iv. 1 καθὼς παρελάβετε παρ᾽ ἡμῶν τὸ πῶς δεῖ ὑμᾶς περιπατεῖν. cf. 1 Tim. iii. 15 ἵνα εἰδήση πῶς δεί... ἀναστρέφεσθαι.

(ix) On the other hand we find ὅτως, which Paul uses adverbially 1 Cor. xiv. 25, Gal. iii. 21, converted by our author into an adjective by the preceding article, 1 Tim. v. 3, 5, 16 ὅτως χήρα, vi. 19 τῆς ὅτως ἔσθης. Cf. Ep. ad Diogn. x. 7 τὸν ὅτως θάνατον, Aristeides, Apol. iv. 1 τοῦ ὅτως θεοῦ—Jus. Ap. xiii. 13, Athenag. Suppl. vii. 2 τὸν ὅτως θεοῦ, xii. 2 τὸν ὅτως θεόν, xv. 3, xxiii. 4 τὸν ὅτως ὄν.

2. ὡς occurs fairly often in the Pastorals, generally followed by a substantive—e.g. παρακάλει ὡς πατέρα, 1 Tim. v. 1. But there is no trace in them of the Pauline uses of ὡς—

(i) with the participle, Rom. iv. 17 καλοῦντος τὰ μὴ ὁντα ὡς ὅντα, Col. ii. 20 ὧς ἔστας ἐν κόσμῳ, 1 Thess. ii. 4 ὡς ἀνθρώποις ἀρέσκοντες, Rom. xv. 15 ὧς ἐπαναμιμηθηκὸν ὑμᾶς, 1 Cor. iv. 7, 18, v. 3, vii. 25 (cf. 1 Tim. i. 13, 16) ὡς ἢλεμένος, vii. 30 f. ὧς κλαίοντες ὡς μὴ κλαίοντες, ὧς καιροῦτες ὡς μὴ καιροῦτες κτλ., 2 Cor. x. 2, vi. 9 ὡς ἀγνοοοῦμενοι κτλ.

(ii) with the adverb—cf. Rom. i. 9 ὡς ἀδιάλειπτως μνειάν ὑμῶν ποιοῦμαι (contrast 2 Tim. i. 3 ὡς ἀδιάλειπτον ἐχω τὴν

---

peri συν μνείαν, where as Holtzmann points out, PB., p. 111, the change leaves no proper motive for the ως), I Cor. ix. 26 οὕτω τρέχω ως οὐκ ἀδήλως, οὕτω πυκτεύω ως οὐκ ἀέρα δέρων, Phil. i. 20 ως πάντωτε καὶ νῦν.

(iii) with ἄν—Rom. xv. 24 ὅς ἄν πορεύωμαι εἰς τ. Σπανίαν, I Cor. xi. 34 τὰ λοιπὰ ως ἄν ἔλθω διατάξομαι, Phil. ii. 23.

3. Another favourite construction of Paul's which is conspicuous by its absence from the Pastoral is, the series of prepositions in a single sentence with reference to some one subject, which is thus 'defined on every side' (Winer), e.g. Rom. i. 17 εκ πίστεως εἰς πίστιν, iii. 22 εἰς πάντας καὶ ἐπὶ πάντας, xi. 36 εξ αὐτοῦ καὶ δι’ αὐτοῦ καὶ εἰς αὐτόν, Gal. i. 1 οὐκ ἄπ’ ἀνθρώπων οὐδὲ δι’ ἀνθρώπου, 2 Cor. xiii. 8 οὖ γὰρ δυνάμεθα τι κατὰ τῆς ἀληθείας ἄλλα ὑπὲρ τῆς ἀληθείας, Col. i. 16 ἐν αὐτῷ ἐκτίσθη τὰ πάντα … τὰ πάντα δι’ αὐτοῦ κ. εἰς αὐτόν ἐκτισται, Eph. iv. 6 εἰς θεός κ. πατὴρ πάντων ὁ ἐπὶ πάντων κ. διὰ πάντων καὶ ἐν πάσιν υμῖν (cf. I Tim. ii. 5 f.), I Cor. xii. 8 f. ὃ μὲν γὰρ διὰ τοῦ πνεύματος … ἀλλὰ δὲ … κατὰ τὸ αὐτὸ πνεῦμα, ἐτέρῳ … ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ πνεύματι κτλ., 2 Cor. iii. 18 ἀπὸ δόξης εἰς δόξαν (Holtzmann, PB., p. 101; Winer, Grammar of N. T. Greek, E. Tr., p. 521 f.).

3. Style.

But we have not yet finished with the missing particles, prepositions, and connecting words generally.

When we have asserted with complete confidence that their absence on the scale now demonstrated cannot by any possibility be dismissed as merely accidental, nor evaded by suggesting airily that the writer had no occasion to use them, nor explained away by any reference to changed circumstances, subject-matter, or readers, we are left face to face with the necessity of considering what is really involved in the facts before us.

This is nothing less than a radical peculiarity of style. It can hardly have been that the words in question were unknown to the writer! But his avoidance of them, whether conscious, deliberate or otherwise, is a strongly marked and highly significant feature in his mode of self-expression. Nor is it confined to any mere surface quality. It is intimately connected with his whole way of thinking and of reasoning, with his very temperament and, in a word, his personality. 'Le style, c'est l'homme.'
Now the style with which the ten Paulines have made us familiar, shows all the irregularities and abruptnesses—the tendency to fly off at a tangent, the sudden turns and swift asides, the parentheses and anacolutha, the frequent incursions of the unexpected—which mark the products of a mind carried along, and sometimes carried away, by the intensity of its own thoughts. Such minds are apt to be preoccupied with the substance of what they are trying to say, and somewhat careless as to its mere form. They tend to be oblivious, rather than scornful, of grammatical rules and precedents as such.

At the same time there runs through all these roughnesses the strong thread of a logical and reasoned argument. If the author does go off sometimes at a tangent, he comes back again to his main point, and takes up his thread, showing that he had never really lost sight of it. As Holtzmann says (P.B., p. 101 f.), 'the real Paul shows himself always equally possessed by his subject, or master of it, and carries his treatment of it through to a definite goal; so that even the smallest aside has ever its due relation to, and place in, the whole; hence it is a pleasure to observe how surely and purposefully this literary tactic proceeds (2 Cor. x. 5)'.

It is precisely here that our particles, prepositions, &c., come in. They are the links which bind the sundry and often variegated elements into a strongly compact and articulate unity; they are the tendons and ligaments 'by which the whole body is fitly framed and knit together through that which every joint supplieth'. That they do not aggressively thrust themselves forward, nor distract attention to themselves, but do their work quietly and unobtrusively, is just as it should be. Were they withdrawn, we should soon feel that there was something wrong, though we might not at once perceive what was the matter, unless we happened to be trained anatomists.

As a literary composition the Pastorals are admittedly less of a living organism, and more of an edifice—a somewhat rambling edifice.1 In this structure the stones are less rugged than the Paul of Rom. or Phil. would have chosen, brick cast in

1 'Le style des pastorales n’a pas la vigueur et la force, la vivacité et l’impétuosité, la vie et la variété, l’âpre rudesse de celui des écrits aux Romains ou aux Galates. Il est lent, monotone, pesant, diffus, décousu’ (Jacquier, Histoire des livres du N. T., i. p. 366).
a mould, instead of granite rough-hewn from the quarry, and they are laid more loosely one on the other than would have suited either the mind of Paul or the nature of his material. Like that spirit whose living garment it is, the style of the Paulines is nothing if not vivid, intense, dynamic, yes, often even volcanic and explosive, always impatient of any curb or restraint from man-made rules. The only bondage to which it will bow the neck is that of the life-giving Spirit 'bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ' (2 Cor. x. 5).

But the style of the Pastorals is by comparison sober, didactic, static, conscientious, domesticated. It lacks the Pauline impetus, the drive and surge of mighty thoughts never spoken before, struggling now for expression, and chafing against the limitations of human speech. It lacks too the Pauline grip and intellectual mastery, strong, clear, logical, sweeping and comprehensive—seeing the end of an argument from the beginning, and binding the whole tumultuous mass into a throbbing vital unity.

It is much rather the speech of a man greatly concerned to preserve intact the correct pattern of sound words, which must be diligently memorized, and faithfully recited, and so passed on from lip to lip as the one duly authorized expression of saving truth. Such with him is the sacred deposit to be handed on from one generation of accredited teachers to another.

But with Paul it was a blazing torch, passing from soul to soul, kindled in each from the same Divine fire which burns for ever on the great altar of the Cross. The Cross! Not once does our author write that word, nor any of its cognates. 'Still,' it may be said, 'he presupposes it in speaking of Him who gave Himself for all.' True, but it was many years since the real Paul made his great resolve to know nothing among his friends save Jesus Christ and Him crucified (1 Cor. ii. 2), many years since he wrote a letter (except the little note to Philemon) without some more explicit reference to that burning focus of the Gospel as he conceived it. (σταύρος, σταυρόω, συνσταυρόω, 20 times in 7 epistles, in all 4 Homologoumena, and in all 3 epistles of the Roman imprisonment.)

The style of the Pastorals has also its irregularities, but these do not on examination tend to qualify in any way, but rather to confirm our impression, that it is a different order of mind which
meets us here from that revealed in the grammatical *tours de force* of the Paulines.

We have (1) the passages in which he does, it is true, make use of Pauline prepositions, &c., but with a certain looseness and vagueness which only throws into relief the absence of any strong logical coherence. What logical connexion with the preceding passage necessitates the *οὖν*, 1 Tim. ii. 1? (Contrast Rom. ii. 21.) Wherein lies the similarity which we are led to expect by the *ὡσαντός*, 1 Tim. ii. 9? (Contrast 1 Cor. xi. 25.) What is the point of the *γάρ*, 1 Tim. ii. 5? What has happened to the apodosis without which the *καθὼς*, 1 Tim. i. 3 (our solitary instance of this favourite Pauline particle—84 times in 9 epistles), is left hanging in the air? It has (to quote Winer) 'escaped his attention' (E. Tr., p. 713).

But this last passage has been claimed as a clinching example of (2) the anacolutha which are so frequent and so marked a feature of the genuine Pauline style. Ramsay (Expositor, 1909, p. 481) finds here a proof that this is a genuine letter, inasmuch as the writer confidently assumed the ability of his correspondent to fill the gap correctly by sympathetic comprehension of the suppressed thought. The ingenuity of this theory may appeal to some. Others will find Winer's simpler explanation more convincing. But in neither case does this passage, even with the help of Titus i. 2 f. (*ὅν ἐπηγγέλατο ... ἐφανέρωσεν δὲ ... τὸν λόγον ἀντιό*) at all adequately balance the effect produced by a careful study of the long series of Pauline anacolutha to be found in any good Grammar of N. T. Greek, e.g. Winer (E. Tr., pp. 709–21). It is no doubt difficult to avoid a certain degree of subjectivity in a comparison of this kind; but the composition of a passage like 1 Tim. i. 3 sqq., seems to differ from that of say Rom. v. 12, as the slow windings of a stream through flat country differ from the headlong rush of a mountain torrent. Nor do the very occasional brief and simple parentheses 1 Tim. ii. 7, 2 Tim. i. 18, iv. 7, 14, 16, by any means fill the place of such outbursts as Gal. ii. 4 f., 6 f. (apart from the fact that the first is taken bodily, as we shall see, from Rom. ix. 1, while the remaining four occur in precisely those verses which most critics agree in regarding as fragments of genuine Pauline notes).

2 p. 90 f.
To the same order of construction, and arising from similar tendencies in the mind of Paul, belong the frequent instances of *Oratio Variata*, consisting of pairs of sentences running parallel and more or less synonymous with one another, and each complete in itself, cf. Rom. iv. 12, 1 Cor. vii. 13 γυνὴ ἤτις ἔχει ἄνδρα ἀπιστον, καὶ οὗτος συνευδοκεῖ ὑπερὶ μετ' αὐτῆς, μὴ ἀφιέτο τὸν ἄνδρα, 1 Cor. xiv. 1 ἐξελεύσατε τὰ πνευματικὰ, μᾶλλον δὲ ὑπαρξεῖν προφητεύετε. Sometimes it takes the form of a transition from the singular to the plural, e.g. Rom. iii. 7 f., xii. 16 f., 20 f., 1 Cor. iv. 6, 2 Cor. xi. 6 ἐλ δὲ καὶ ἰδιώτης τῷ λόγῳ . . . ἀλλ' ἐν παντὶ φανερώσαντες κτλ. Of these heterogeneous periods too the Pastorals are innocent.

Yet another idiosyncrasy of our author is his curious fondness for certain types of compound, notably those bearing either the prefix προ- or α- privative. There is of course nothing unusual in the mere occurrence of either of these formations, both of which are found occasionally in Paul himself and in many other writers. What strikes our notice here is their quite extraordinary frequency. That this is no merely subjective impression may be seen from Diagram VI. Words beginning with α- privative appear not less than 1.5 and not more than 2.3 on the average to the page of any Pauline; but the average in 1 Tim. is 4.1, in 2 Tim. 5.1, in Titus 6.75. It is not easy to find any satisfactory reason why the same writer who in ten epistles over eleven years kept within these narrow limits, should have gone beyond them to this extent in just these three instances.

1 Appendix I G, p. 155 f.
II. DIFFICULTY OF RECONCILING THE LINGUISTIC PECULIARITIES OF THE PASTORALS WITH THEIR PAULINE AUTHORSHIP.

In vocabulary, grammar, and style, then, the Pastorals show a marked divergence from all other epistles bearing the name of Paul; and this divergence is now seen to be even wider and to go deeper than had been realized hitherto.

We have, therefore, to consider quite dispassionately—remembering the high demands of Truth and the grave issues involved—whether or not the facts before us are compatible with the hypothesis of Pauline authorship. Can they be adequately explained by taking into account the many-sided personality of Paul, the natural development of his thought and modes of self-expression, the changed circumstances and subject-matter, the persons addressed, the possible influence of an amanuensis, or any other of the considerations which have been, or can be, advanced in support of that hypothesis?

1. The Writer.

Complete uniformity of style, diction, and vocabulary must not, of course, be expected in any author, least of all in one with a mind so versatile, pliable, original, fresh, impressionable, and creative as the Apostle. A certain progressive modification was required by all analogy and by the laws of development, and is in fact visible in the existing Paulines, which fall into three clearly defined groups—(a) the earliest letters, 1 and 2 Thess., (b) the four ‘Homologoumena’, Rom., 1 and 2 Cor., Gal., and (c) the epistles of the Roman Imprisonment, Eph., Col., Philem., and Phil. With these last the Pastorals have quite a number of words in common. Given a further period of from two to five years, with the added experience they must have brought, then, it is argued, the evidence of yet further changes in the Apostle’s diction ought not to surprise us half so much as would the absence of any such change.

Now we shall presently show reason to doubt whether room can be found in the life of the Apostle for this further development (Part III, pp. 102 ff.). But, waiving this point, the question
LINGUISTIC PECULIARITIES

still remains whether the actual extent of the departure from Paul's manner is not far too great to be accounted for along these lines.

(i) Paul's mind did not first begin to be versatile, original, or impressionable at the end of his career. It had all these characteristics, and showed them more clearly in many ways, in the earlier epistles. But, like all true genius, it moved within certain limits, and was subject to certain laws, some consciously self-imposed, others quite unconscious, imposed by the very nature of things.

The number of Greek words known to Paul, though considerable—far greater, doubtless, than the number actually used in his surviving ten epistles—was not by any means unlimited. His working vocabulary, as seen in those epistles over a period of eleven years, was drawn from within a circle, or series of concentric circles, which can be described with precision. It included 2,177 different words, of which 1,113 do not occur in more than one epistle, 396 occur in two epistles, 230 in three, 126 in four, 96 in five, 53 in six, 46 in seven, 35 in eight, 35 in nine, and 47 in ten. See Appendix I, p. 160.

The originality and freshness of Paul's mind is seen in the wonderful way in which it uses these limited materials to express such a series of new thoughts and boundless aspirations, and such a mighty conception of reality seen and unseen, as had never before been put into words at all.

To discard suddenly at the end of a lifetime such a host of favourite expressions, and introduce in their stead such a mass of new and unfamiliar terms, might indicate a certain kind of versatility, but not the kind which we have any reason for attributing to the Apostle.

We have certainly no wish to impose an arbitrary cast-iron standard on any human mind, least of all on Paul's mind. Deissmann is perfectly right in saying that one must not try 'to mechanize the wonderful variety of the linguistic elements in the Greek Bible'. But Deissmann would be the last to commit us or himself to the principle that there are no limits at all to the probabilities of variation in an author's style and vocabulary. It may have been physically possible for Paul to have composed a trio of letters in which not only 21 per cent. but 90 per cent.

1 Bibelstudien, 1895, p. 66.
of the words were *Hapax Legomena*. But it remains equally incredible that he should have done so, whether by accident or by design.

(ii) Each of the Paulines, and each of the three groups into which they fall chronologically, has naturally a certain number of expressions peculiar to itself, and lacks some that appear more or less frequently in the others. But that this is so to a degree comparable for a moment with that obtaining in the case of the Pastorals can hardly be asserted in the face of the evidence now forthcoming, and must be dismissed as a subjective impression in direct conflict with the objective facts. Under test after test the Pastorals are shown to be divided from the other epistles by a great gulf, to which the actual differences among these afford no sort of analogy.

(iii) But, 'we do not demand that Shakespeare's *Sonnets* or *Cymbeline* should exhibit a certain percentage of *Hamlet* words. . . . Antecedently we should not expect that an author's favourite expressions would be distributed over the pages of his book like the spots on a wall-paper pattern.'

Still, if the authorship of a play supposed to be Shakespeare's were open to very serious doubts on other grounds, those doubts would hardly be allayed by the discovery that it contained an extraordinarily low percentage of the commonest and most characteristic Shakespearean terms, and a correspondingly high percentage of words found in no Elizabethan playwright, but current among those of the late seventeenth century. And having observed carefully the actual extent and the actual limits of variation among all the other known writings of an author, over a long period of years, we do certainly look for some sort of approximation to his normal line of development, in a work purporting to come from the same author after a brief interval.

(iv) A 'development' there is indeed from 1 Thess. to Phil., not quite mechanical in its regularity, but real and natural, with the fluctuations which so often mark a natural process. But applied to a transition like that from Phil. to the Pastorals, this word, implying as it does a certain degree of orderly continuity, would seem to be a misnomer.

2 See below, pp. 67 ff.
It is quite true that the Pastorals have a certain number of words in common with the epistles of the Roman imprisonment and with these only. The actual figure is 28, as against 160 shared exclusively with the group Rom., Cor., Gal., and 13 with 1 and 2 Thess. Allowing for the differences in length, we get an average of 1.5 per page of the Thessalonian epistles shared by the Pastorals with these exclusively, 2.1 per page with the four Homologoumena, and only 1.2 with the four prison-letters. They have thus rather less exclusively in common with the latest than with the earlier groups, which is hardly what the idea of development would have led us to expect, supposing them to have been written by Paul a few years after Philippians.

On the same hypothesis 2 Tim. must, of course, be the last of the three; and we should in that case have expected to find in this epistle still further progress than in 1 Tim. and Titus away from Paul's earlier manner. Instead we find that 2 Tim. stands much the nearest of the three to the other Paulines—a fact which agrees perfectly with the theory that this epistle contains much the largest amount of genuine Pauline matter. See Diagram III, p. 25.

2. Circumstances.

But, it is urged, 'circumstances alter cases'. (a) The changed environment of the Apostle, further travels, fresh experiences, new acquaintances, would naturally lead to a further modification of vocabulary, &c., especially in one so 'sympathetic and open to influences from without'. 'Weariness, ill-health, gloomy prospects, and growing years and cares, might all be important factors in the case.' The Apostle's lengthy sojourn in Rome might perhaps account for the number of Latinisms which make their appearance in these epistles.

This line of explanation, like the last, is of course closed to those who believe that Paul wrote the Pastorals during the period recorded in Acts, i.e. the same period as the other epistles.

But even if we assume a second imprisonment, and grant the abstract principle that new experiences beget new expressions, and that changed surroundings would tend to exercise a certain influence over the language of any impressionable writer, it still

1 White, 1910, p. 59.  
2 Shaw, 1904, p. 440.  
3 James, 1906, p. 148.
remains more than doubtful whether the facts before us can be adequately explained in this way. For—

(i) the ten Paulines themselves were not all written under identical circumstances, nor was the life of the Apostle altogether monotonous during those eleven years. He had already passed through many vicissitudes, made many new friends, travelled far, knew bodily sickness and pain, mental distress and disappointment, suffered many losses and hardships, cares and sorrows, trials and dangers, had spent at least two years as a prisoner in Rome, and had come to feel the burden of advancing age, before he wrote Phil. Yet the ten epistles show no such far-reaching changes among themselves.

(ii) Assuming their Pauline authorship, the Pastorals must have been written under circumstances as different from one another as from those in which some of the others were composed,—and in fact more so. Almost the only circumstance common to the three, but foreign to the ten, would be found in Paul’s added years—that is supposing, what is strongly denied, that he survived his first Roman imprisonment. But, even so, as Otto pointed out long ago, in reply to Guericke, it is not the usual result of old age to produce a new vocabulary.

For the rest it must be asked, which of the circumstances now under consideration was really new to the Apostle? He was no stranger to most of these influences when he wrote 2 Cor. xi. 12–30, but their effect upon his style and diction was then quite different.

(iii) Some of the Latinisms (μεμβράνα, φαύλδνης) occur in passages the Pauline authorship of which is not disputed. The residue may be explained by supposing, with Holtzmann1 and others, that Rome was the birthplace of these epistles. In any case Rome was not the only place in the world where an occasional Latin word would be quite natural and intelligible in a Greek composition.

(b) Conditions within the Church, too, were different in various ways from those prevailing when Paul wrote his earlier epistles. We have to consider the possible influence of this upon his choice of words and general mode of expression. In particular there is the appearance of the False Teachers, and the necessity for

1 Holtzmann, PB., pp. 109, 271.
choosing special terms to describe them and their novel theories, and to suit the new atmosphere of debate and acrimonious strife created by their presence. Moreover, the Church had itself developed, by the time these epistles were written, in organization, polity, discipline, liturgy, and practical Christianity.

The specific circumstances here named are themselves among the principal grounds of objection against the Pauline authorship of these epistles. But the question whether their introduction within the lifetime of the Apostle is, or is not, in the nature of an anachronism, does not fall within the scope of the present linguistic argument. In any case, Paul was not now for the first time forced to breathe the heated atmosphere of doctrinal discussions, nor to deal with opposition on the part of false teachers coming in and leading weak minds astray. We do not find this particular type of linguistic phenomena in Galatians nor yet in Colossians.

3. Subject-Matter.

The same remarks apply in part to the suggestion that we should refer peculiarities of diction to the new subject-matter. Thus we have (i) a whole series of what have been described as technical terms belonging to (a) the heresies to be rejected (γενεαλογία, γνώσις, ψευδώνυμος), (b) the true doctrines to be inculcated (διδασκαλία, παραθήκη, ὑγιής), (c) the ecclesiastical rules to be enforced (γυμνάξειν, διδακτικός, ἐπισκοπὴ, νεόφυτος), (d) the religious and moral situation presupposed (βέβηλος, εὐσέβεια, σεμνότης).

The reasons for and against regarding precisely these matters as marks of a later age belong to another field of inquiry, about which the most fundamental differences of opinion remain. But there is no need to reserve our judgement on the present issue until those vexed questions of Church History have been settled. For, even supposing that the whole ecclesiastical situation might have developed in Paul's mind and experience along the lines, and to the extent, indicated in these epistles,—it still would not by any means follow that we should have here a satisfactory explanation of the varied, deep, and far-reaching contrast now

demonstrated between the language of the Pastorals and that of the ten Paulines.

The very wide range of subjects covered by the ten Paulines themselves has not, in their case, resulted in similar discrepancies. And it has been pointed out many times\(^1\) that the vagueness and generality of many of these 'technical terms' is unlike Paul, who was accustomed to meet the errors of his day in a more thoroughgoing and concrete fashion, coming to closer grips with the fundamental ideas of his antagonists, and showing how and where they were wrong. It was not his way to content himself with disparaging epithets and labels to the extent that we find in these epistles. Many of these terms are wide enough and vague enough to have fitted equally well the disturbers of the churches of Galatia or of Colossae; but they do not appear in Paul's letters to those communities. The residue of more precise and definite expressions coincides significantly with the terminology of second-century writers in characterizing the heresies, church-institutions, &c., of their day.

(ii) Least of all would any change in subject-matter seem to account for that strange absence of more than a hundred Pauline particles, &c., or for those radical differences in grammar and style, to which reference has been made on pp. 34-44. Can this very disuse of particles, conjunctions, &c., be explained by referring to the absence of dialectic discussions, and by suggesting that the Pastorals consist mainly of instructions, disciplinary rules, and regulations, rather than detailed arguments or expositions?

Hardly, for the Pauline prepositions, &c., missing from the Pastorals are not by any means confined to argumentative or keenly logical contexts. The absence, e.g., of ἀν, παρά with the accusative, τότε, τε, ἐκαστος, ἐτι, ἐμαυτόν, κάγω, οὔτε, σῦν, &c., &c., does not so much as begin to be explained by any such considerations.

(iii) A certain number of the unique words in the Pastorals must certainly be written off on the ground that their uniqueness is obviously quite accidental. Their presence is necessitated by the introduction of sundry matters of which the Apostle had no occasion to speak in his earlier letters, though he might

\(^1\) e.g., by McGiffert, *A. A.*, p. 402; Moffatt, *I. N. T.*, p. 409.
perfectly well have done so, had occasion required; e.g. ἀγωγή, ἀκαίρως, ἀνάλυσις, βέλτιον, μάμμη, μεμβράνα, στόμαχος, φαίλόνης, χαλκεύς.

But the number of these is strictly limited, and a certain number of unique words under this heading must similarly be written off from each of the other epistles also, if the comparison is to be drawn fairly. Most of them occur, as it happens, in the admittedly genuine paragraphs. The elimination of the remainder would not materially lessen the mass of non-Pauline expressions.

4. Amanuensis.

We know that Paul did not write all, if he wrote any, of his earlier letters with his own hand, but dictated them to an amanuensis (Rom. xvi. 22 ἐγὼ Τέρτιος ὁ γράφας τὴν ἐπιστολὴν), only taking the pen to add a few words of personal greeting at the close (1 Cor. xvi. 21, 2 Thess. iii. 17 f., Gal. vi. 11 ff., Col. iv. 18).

A prima facie explanation of the linguistic peculiarities of the Pastorals, which does not at the same time prejudice their apostolic authority, has been found in the suggestion that, in this case, the amanuensis may have been allowed more freedom than usual as to the precise form and wording, while faithfully reproducing the substance of the apostolic message.

That the name of Luke should have been thought of in this connexion was almost inevitable, in view of the fact that he alone was with Paul at the time when 2 Tim. iv. 11 was being written.

Those who adopt this explanation bear witness as a rule explicitly, as well as by the very fact that they find such a hypothesis necessary, to the reality and weight of the difficulties in the way of an unqualified belief in the direct Pauline authorship. At the same time they point out quite clearly that it must have been Luke if any one who filled this rôle.

1 H. A. Schott, Isagoge Historico-Critica in Libros Novi Foederis Sacros, 1830, p. 325: 'vir quidam apostolicus, unus ex sodalibus Pauli (forsitan Lucas), ipsius Apostoli nomine et auctoritate has litteras exaravit.'

2 J. D. James, Genuineness and Authorship of the P. E., 1906, pp. 144, 154 f. Robert Scott, Pauline Epistles, 1909: 'It is not for a moment imaginable that Paul . . . could have written these three moral charges . . . , and have written them in a new terminology' (p. 350 f.).

3 James, p. 154: "Only Luke is with me"—stares us on the written page'. Cf. Scott, p. 333, Luke is 'the one companion of Paul whom we know to have possessed the two qualifications of literary ability and Gentile birth'.

...
But as a real solution of our problem this hypothesis can hardly be said to pass the necessary tests. The phenomena before us are not by any means of such a nature that they can be accounted for by imagining a superimposition of the Lucan style and vocabulary upon the Pauline. The *Hapax Legomena* are of course as foreign to Luke as to Paul. The total absence of such particularly frequent and characteristic Pauline words as ἀδικέω, -ος, ἀκάθαρτος, ἀποθνήσκω, ἀναγκάζω, ἀποκάλυψις, -πτω, βλέπω, γνωρίζω, διαθήκη, ἔνδω, ἐργάζομαι, ἐξουθενέω, εὐδοκέω, εὐλογεώ, ξῆλος, καταρτίζω, κενός, κοινωνία, οἰκοδομέω, οὐρανός, ὀφειλέτης, περισσεύω, πράσσω, σταυρός, σῶμα, νῖσ, ὑπάρχω, φοβερόμαι, χαρίζομαι, ὅρα, does not become any more intelligible when we presuppose as the amanuensis a writer who in his own works uses every one of these words, some of them with great frequency. Still less does the Lucan hypothesis help us to understand the strange omission of Pauline particles, &c., seeing that Luke himself uses ἀν 56 times, ἀντὶ 5, ἄρα 11, ἄχρι 21, γε 13, διὸ 10, διότι 8, ἐγγύς 6, ἐκατός 16, ἐμαυτόν 6, ἐμπροσθεν 12, ἐνεκεν 8, ἔξω 20, ἐπεὶ 3, ἐπεὶδὴ 5, ἔτι 21, ἐως 30, ἵδο 79, κάγω 12, ναὶ 6, ὅμοιως 11, ὅπως 7, ὅπως 22, οὐ 14, οὕθελ 6, οὐχὶ 21, οὐκέτι 7, οὔτε 22, πάλιν 8, παρά with accus. 22, πάντως 4, πλὴν 19, πόσος 7, ποθ; 7, σῶς 7, σῦν 77, τε 154, τότε 36, ὅσπερ 5, and ὡστε 13 times.

It is not easy to see how the co-operation of two such minds as Paul's and Luke's should have led to the introduction of so many terms utterly foreign to them both, and the omission of two such large and important series of words which they had both found indispensable. Nor can the stylistic divergencies of the Pastorals from the Pauline manner be fairly said to point towards the peculiar grace, literary charm, and finish so conspicuous in the Lucan writings.

It seems nearer the mark, therefore, to hold that, while the affinity between our author and the writer of the Third Gospel and of Acts is clear and indisputable, their identity would be quite incredible on linguistic grounds alone, and cannot be accepted as a possible explanation of the facts with which we are now concerned.
5. Recipients.

The Pastorals are addressed to individuals, not to churches. May not this be the true explanation of their peculiarities as compared with the other Paulines?

Promising as this way of escape from our difficulties may seem at first sight, it is beset, from the start, with pitfalls for the unwary, and leads at last to a veritable morass of shifting speculations, where we are obliged to leap from one precarious hypothesis to another in the vain hope of reaching firmer ground.

Stated in general terms, and without further qualification, it is met at once by the obvious and fatal objection that the Epistle to Philemon, which really is a private letter in a far fuller and truer sense than either of these, shows no trace of the special features now under consideration; on the contrary, it keeps remarkably close to the normal Pauline type, and well inside its natural allowance of unique words.

We must therefore retrace our steps and begin again, exercising greater care this time to avoid the mistake of putting more weight on the private character and destination of our epistles than it will carry. They are—shall we say—private communications about matters concerning the Church as a whole, addressed to personal friends in their official capacity, thus differing on the one hand from Philemon, which is addressed to a private member on a purely private matter, and on the other hand from the other nine Paulines, which are addressed to churches? By this necessary distinction the maximum distance is left between the Pastorals and the letters to churches, consistent with immunity from the awkward analogy of Philemon. But when we have thus succeeded in framing a formula which excludes all other Paulines, while it includes the Pastorals, we have still to show just how and why this explains the many and great differences already noted. ²

¹ e.g. Gloag, Introduction to the Pauline Epistles, 1874, p. 380.
² Koelling (i Tim. auf's Neue untersucht u. ausgelegt, 1882-7, p. 24) regards this distinction as 'wholly central to the present field of investigation, and the key to their linguistic peculiarity'. Similarly Rüegg (Zur Echtheitsfrage der PR., 1898, p. 62 f.): 'We are dealing here with an entirely new class of epistle to which we possess no analogue among the undisputed
Can we say that the superior education of Timothy and Titus made it possible and natural for the Apostle to write to them in a literary style, and use a number of more or less technical terms, which would have been unsuitable in writing to churches, because unintelligible to the majority of simple and ignorant folk of which they were composed? 1

This matter of the ‘technical terms’ has partly been dealt with already (p. 50 f.), and partly falls outside our present inquiry. Meanwhile, regarding the theory of a ‘linguistic dualism’ in Paul’s epistles, analogous to that between Schleiermacher’s beautiful letters to his wife and his sister, and his correspondence with scientific friends like Gass and de Wette on technical subjects, we have to inquire, does it meet the case?

Can it be maintained that the style and diction of the Pastoral bear evidence of being addressed and adapted to a more highly educated type of mind than, say, the Epistle to the Romans? True, he tells the Corinthian brethren that he has been obliged to speak to them as to babes, and to feed them with milk suited to their spiritual (he does not say mental) capacity (1 Cor. iii. 1 f.). But neither the ancient Church (2 Pet. iii. 15 f.) nor the modern has ever yet derived from these epistles to churches the impression that their author was writing down to the mental level of ignorant and illiterate readers.

On the other hand we must avoid putting too much stress on the superior educational qualifications of Timothy and Titus, and the personal, intimate, and confidential character of the letters addressed to them, or we shall soon find ourselves involved in

Paulines. . . . A writing made up of Pastoral instructions was bound to show an essentially different linguistic character’.

1 ‘In Paul’s letters to communities he had to take account of the fact that οὐ πολλοὶ σοφοὶ, οὐ πολλοὶ δύνατοι, κτλ., 1 Cor. i. 26.’ The rank and file were ‘largely uneducated, slaves, &c.’ ‘In writing to them he needed to exercise the greatest care in the structure of sentences, and the utmost sobriety and detail (Ausführunglichkeit) in the development of his thoughts, and to avoid in his expressions, especially in his choice of words, everything which in any way went beyond the popular means of knowledge, circle of ideas, and range of diction’ (Koeßing, p. 27). ‘But in writing to Timothy, he was addressing a man who like himself had no mean scientific qualifications’ (p. 41 f.). ‘Men with a literary education write in a different fashion to one another than they do to simple folk’ (p. 44). ‘The great bulk of the Ἁπάξ Ἑρεμομένα in 2 Tim. are ‘scientific termini’, and ‘as such, it is thoroughly natural for them to appear in a letter whose author and recipient alike undoubtedly possessed the scientific qualification’ (p. 159).
very serious difficulties with regard to the tone of these epistles, which now seems all the more strangely pedagogic.¹

The problem is to find a way out of these difficulties without wholly sacrificing the private letter hypothesis as a satisfactory explanation of the linguistic peculiarities. A solution which has commended itself to some minds is that we should regard the Pastorals as semi-private communications of which certain portions were intended for Timothy and Titus alone, while others were to be produced by them as their authority when issuing instructions to the Church at large.²

Presumably Titus i. 12 (Κρητές ἐσίν ψευδοταῖς, κακὰ θηρία κτλ.) would be one of the parts reserved by Titus for his own private information. However that may be, it is clear that the present hypothesis can only be maintained at the expense of the last. Communications which were intended to be used as a sort of credentials cannot at the same time have been meant for the eyes of Timothy and Titus alone. They are now shown to be private only in form, and the whole argument based on the superior education and scientific equipment of Timothy and Titus falls to the ground. We cannot possibly have it both ways.

But now what of our new position? In avoiding Scylla, we are drawn back inexorably into Charybdis. For we are left without any adequate explanation of those glaring linguistic discrepancies which the private letter theory recognizes and was designed to meet.

It is inadequate, for instance, to suggest that, as 1 and 2 Thess. have an average of 5 Hapax Legomena to the chapter, Rom.

¹ Shaw, p. 442: 'Timothy is addressed as an immature youth who needs very elementary lessons in life and duty. . . . It also sounds strange that to him above all Paul should think it needful to make strong assertions regarding his apostleship and his truthfulness. In short he tells Timothy a great deal that he must often have told him before, and he tells it in rather a stern manner on the whole. . . . It must be confessed that there is much in such objections that is very hard to explain, and sufficiently justifiable of doubt.'

² Findlay, Appendix to the English Transl. of Sabatier’s St. Paul, p. 369: 'Why, it is asked, should he write to his old assistants and familiaris, his “true children” in the Faith, with so much stiffness and formality, and such an air of authority? . . . The answer lies partly in the fact that these epistles, especially 1 Tim. and Titus, are “open” or quasi-public letters, written with the Churches of Ephesus and Crete in view, and such as it would be suitable to read, in part at least, at their assemblies.' Cf. Dummellow’s One Volume Bible Commentary, 1909, pp. 992, 1006: 'private correspondence, not strictly confidential . . . . The author is writing with his eye on the community.'
nearly 7, Eph.—Col. 8, Phil. 10, and the Pastorals 13, ‘the regular progression of the above figures marks them as belonging to one and the same series’.

For the chapter is an artificial and an elastic standard of measurement, and its use for the present purpose would tend to obscure the state of things revealed in our Diagram I (p. 21).

Nor can we recall any really convincing account of the Missing Particles from this point of view, nor one that does justice to the facts set forth in our table (p. 36 f.).

Still less is the final verdict of scholarship likely to be influenced by any argument based on the use of our Saviour’s name in the Pastorals, which omits to mention the very important fact that whereas Paul uses Ἰησοῦς alone at least 38 times, and in every epistle except Philem., Χριστός alone and without the article 126 times, and in every epistle except 2 Thess., and δ Ἰησοῦς 79 times, and in every epistle except Philem., the author of the Pastorals, according to Westcott and Hort’s text, never once uses either Ἰησοῦς alone or Χριστός alone, and δ Χριστός alone only once, 1 Tim. v. 11. If the reading Ἰησοῦς in 2 Tim. iv. 22 be correct (so W. H. and v. Soden’s text), this is the exception which proves the rule. For this verse is admittedly Pauline.

6. Forgery.

But may it not be that these very difficulties, which offer such a stubborn resistance to all frontal attacks, may yet succumb to a flanking movement, or better still, an assault from the rear, and so prove to be ‘not insuperable’ after all?

Why should it not be argued that such obvious and striking discrepancies, when set in the right light, tell rather in favour of the Pauline authorship than against it? What forger would have dared to run such a risk of detection? Who else but the Apostle himself could afford to indulge in such a patent departure from the normal and familiar style and diction of the Apostle? What could have been easier for a clever falsarius than to avoid every non-Pauline expression, and confine himself strictly to words and

---

1 Findlay, p. 354.
2 id., p. 359. He mentions four! (Similarly J. D. James, p. 134.)
3 id., p. 361.
idioms for which a parallel could be produced from within the genuine epistles? ¹

Now the whole question of pseudonymity in ancient writings generally, and in the second century in particular, requires a chapter to itself, where the procedure, motives, ethic, and psychology of this very interesting and important literary method could be dealt with in more detail than is possible here.² Meanwhile it is certain that those who deny the Pauline authorship of the Pastorals do not as a rule use the terms 'forger' and falsarius in this connexion. Nor would they admit for one moment that these terms, with their distinct implication of moral depravity and of the deliberate will to deceive, represent the only alternative to the Pauline authorship of these epistles.

But how should it ever have entered the head of any second-century Christian writer—even of a 'forger' of the deepest dye—to sift out from his original every little particle and preposition, and to pepper his own composition with them, for the more thorough deception of his readers? Would such a procedure really have been quite so easy in those days as has been suggested? Without a concordance it would not be just the simplest task in the world even now. And what would have been the use of it? What second-century reader would ever have noticed such a point, or allowed it to influence him in the least? We know that the absence of Pauline particles did not in fact prevent the acceptance of these epistles as Paul's by the Church towards the close of that century. It was not by such canons that the early Church determined the apostolic authority of any work, but by its practical value for edification, and its faithfulness to the apostolic teaching as then held and under-

¹ 'If the logical particles of the argumentative epistles are missing, this is in favour of authenticity rather than otherwise. Nothing would have been easier for a man steeped in Paulinism like our author, than to sprinkle his pages with catchwords of this kind.' (Findlay, p. 359).

² A clever falsarius would not have omitted such obvious marks of his master's style. A writer who could have reproduced the parenthetical sentences of St. Paul would not have failed in such a minor detail' (James, p. 154).

³ For a forger would have been at pains to keep as closely as possible to the admitted style of the writer whose name he was fraudulently assuming' (Bowen, Dates of the Pastoral Epistles, 1900, p. 6 f.).

⁴ 'In fact, the only man who can afford to differ largely from previous compositions is the author himself' (Shaw, p. 439).

stood. So far from its being ‘obvious’, many centuries had to pass before this mark of the master’s style could be recognized as such; and even now it would certainly escape the notice of the vast majority of readers, unless it were pointed out to them.

But the certain fact that a point of this kind lay right outside the mental scope and interests of early Christendom, makes it none the less valuable as a test for our present purpose. Indeed the very unconsciousness of the symptoms renders them all the more significant. This applies still more forcibly to the facts brought to light in our diagrams.

7. Literary Analogies.

If the sharp contrast between the language of the Pastorals and that of the ten Paulines cannot be denied, and if all attempts to explain it consistently with their Pauline authorship prove unavailing, can the position still be turned by referring to analogous variations among the works of any other writer ancient or modern?

The difficulty with so many of the ancients is that the true origin of their reputed works is wrapped in an obscurity as deep as, or deeper still than, that which we are now seeking to penetrate. So that it is a case of explaining ‘ignotum per ignotius’.

On the other hand, any modern writer is divided from Paul by so vast an abyss of time, so many incalculable changes resulting from the invention of printing (to name only one all-important factor), that, even supposing that any real resemblance were apparent, it would be largely nullified by the obvious differences between the two cases.

A great majority of the analogies which have actually been suggested in this connexion are much too indefinite to affect in any way the issue before us, which is one of degree and of concrete detail. General observations about the liability of an author’s style and diction to vary with his subject-matter, &c., coupled with vague allusions to Luther, Klopstock, Dante or any other versatile writer whose name happens to occur,¹ are powerless against the great body of facts now specified.

¹ ‘Why should not a certain change and development in mode of expression and of writing have taken place in Paul, just as in others?’ Wohlenberg,
For, as J. S. Mill showed long ago, the force and value of an argument from analogy may amount to anything or nothing (Logic, III. xx). Everything depends upon the precise extent and character of the resemblance upon which the inference is based, as compared 'first with the amount of ascertained difference, and next with the extent of the unexplored regions of unascertained properties'.

Considering the possibilities of such an inquiry, it may seem somewhat surprising that there should have been so few attempts to produce concrete examples of linguistic variations analogous to those which distinguish the Pastorals from all other Pauline epistles. But the labour involved is considerable, and in itself not very exhilarating. A reliable word-index is indispensable, and is only forthcoming for a very limited number of authors. It may have been partly the existence of such an index which led W. P. Workman to select Shakespeare as the subject of an experiment in this direction, which some have found reassuring (Expository Times, vol. vii, 1896, p. 418 f).

In this article Workman sets out 'to exhibit, with an approach to scientific accuracy, the real value or valuelessness of the numbers in question'. He proceeds to state the numbers of Hapax Legomena per page in the Pastorals and in the Paulines, and continues, 'It is no longer possible for any candid man to say that there is no case for investigation. These epistles are now seen to present twice as many unusual words as any other of Paul's, and three times as many as most.'

Having indicated the 'unsatisfactory' nature of previous explanations, he now provides the 'true answer', which is twofold. ' (1) The epistles stand roughly in the order of age, the latest coming first. The general tendency of a writer, as he advances in knowledge of a language, and mastery of its possibilities, is to use more unusual words and more involved constructions.... (2) The number of unusual words in the writings of an author is a very variable quantity, and as a matter of fact, there is nothing to excite comment in the fact that one writing contains three times as many as another.' Then follows in tabular form a list of Shakespeare's plays, showing in each case the number of words Die Pastoralbriefe, 1906, p. 53, and instances Luther, Klopstock, Schiller, and Goethe.
per page not found in any other play nor in the poems—all based on the lists in the Irving edition. From these it appears that 'the frequency in Shakespeare varies from 3:4 (Julius Caesar) to 10:4 (Hamlet), a range almost exactly the same as in Paul where it varies from 3:6 to 13'.

'This striking fact seems (to Workman) to be almost fatal to the argument against authenticity as drawn from Hapax Legomena.' And with this view quite a number of subsequent writers concur, e.g. James (1906), R. D. Shaw (1904).1

(i) The writers are indeed, as Shaw admits, 'very dissimilar'. Apart from the fact that both were men of high genius, it would be difficult to name two authors more unlike, or two series of writings presenting a sharper contrast in form, length, purpose, subject-matter, and spirit, or produced under circumstances more remote.

'But', Shaw continues, 'he is not comparing Paul with Shakespeare. He is comparing Paul with Paul, and Shakespeare with Shakespeare. He shows that each is an illustration of his general principle.'

Still, he is comparing a certain variation in 'Paul' with what he regards as a similar variation in Shakespeare. And his method of drawing the comparison is open, as we shall show, to more than one fatal objection.

(ii) But he has appealed to Shakespeare, unto Shakespeare let him go! And first of all, that we may visualize the evidence on the strength of which he claims to have exhibited 'sufficiently the utter weakness of the argument' (from Hapax Legomena), let us turn to the diagrams, VII and VIII, on pp. 62 and 63, in which the Pauline and the Shakespearean variations, as indicated by his own figures, may be taken in at a glance.

We observe, to begin with, that chronological development has little or nothing to do with the actual variations in the numbers of Shakespearean Hapax Legomena. The latest play stands lower than the earliest, and the play with the largest number stands next in order of time to that with the smallest number—not a very good illustration of the 'general tendency' alleged by Workman as 'surely beyond dispute'!

But the two main points to be considered are (a) the maximum

1 The Pauline Epistles, p. 438: 'legitimate and forcible'.
Diagram VII. Shakespearean Hapax Legomena

Number of words per page (in the Oxford one-volume edition) not found elsewhere in Shakespeare.
limits of variation in each series, and (b) the nature of the intermediate stages.

As regards the first (a), Shakespeare's 'range', in Workman's sense of the word, and according to his own figures, is seen to fall short of Paul's in the ratio of 7:9.4 (assuming the Pauline authorship of the Pastorals).

But we have been told that he 'is comparing Paul with Paul and Shakespeare with Shakespeare'. That is precisely what he has not done. He has compared Shakespeare with Shakespeare and Paul with the whole body of N. T. writers! To make his comparison what it is claimed to be, he ought to have given us the number of words per page in each Pauline which are not to be found in either of the others—including by all means for the sake of argument the Pastorals. These will be found in our Diag. II, line B B, p. 23.

We now see (1) that assuming the Pauline authorship of the Pastorals, the Pauline 'range' amounts to no less than fourteen
words per page, or exactly twice that of Shakespeare; (2) that it does so simply and solely by virtue of one tremendous leap at the end accomplished in worn old age; whereas (3) if we confine our attention to the other ten epistles (line A A), the Pauline 'range' is 5-2, or less by 1-8 than the Shakespearean, and the general trend of the two curves is remarkably similar. Finally, (4) by granting, as we have done, for the sake of the experiment, the very point at issue—the Pauline authorship of the three Pastorals—we have ruled out the very considerable number of non-Pauline words shared by each of them with one or both of its fellows. If these are taken into account, then the number per page of non-Pauline words in the Pastorals treated as a unit is 22-4. Or if, refusing to let them help one another, we take each separately on its merits, then Titus alone is found to have no less than 30-4 such words per page, and the Pauline 'range' rises to 23, or more than three times the Shakespearean!

(5) As regards the second, which is really the crucial point (the nature of the intermediate stages), between the two extremes mentioned, the remaining thirty-five plays form an absolutely orderly and unbroken sequence. In no single instance is there a gap of more than one word per page, the average distance between one play and another being about 0-2, and our 'curve' barely diverges from a straight line. Whereas the Pauline curve, after following for ten epistles a course very similar to the Shakespearean, on reaching the Pastorals, makes a sudden and violent leap upwards from 6-8 to 11 and 13 (taking once more Workman's own figures), a phenomenon to which the Shakespearean line offers no sort of analogy. For, in the transition from the 3-4 of Julius Caesar to the 10-4 of Hamlet, for 7ths of the way Shakespeare was only returning to the level (9-3) which he had already attained in King Henry IV, Pt. I. The increase on his own previous record was thus only 1-1. Whereas Paul's transition from the 6-8 of Phil. to the 11 of 2 Tim. or the 13 of 1 Tim.—Titus starts from the highest, instead of the lowest, point he had ever touched, thus exceeding his previous record by a greater distance than he had covered during the whole period of his previous literary career. The contrast is, of course, here too, still further accentuated, if we take into account the necessary correction of Workman's figures indicated above (a).
AND PAULINE AUTHORSHIP

For these reasons the present writer is unable to regard the analogy from Shakespeare as being in any way detrimental, let alone 'fatal', to the argument against the Pauline authorship of the Pastorals, as drawn from *Hapax Legomena*. At the same time he desires to make full acknowledgement of his own indebtedness to Mr. Workman for having actually pointed the way, by his very interesting and suggestive experiment, to those further statistical investigations which play so large a part in this Essay.

8. Derivatives.

Jacquier (1903, p. 362 f.) urges that many of the *Hapax Legomena* in the Pastorals are derivatives of Pauline words, and that most of the new compounds have their analogies in the other epistles.

But this is an argument that cuts both ways, and cuts deeper against the conservative view. For if derivatives are to be taken into account—and it is quite right that they should be (due caution being observed)—then they must obviously be taken into account all round. In that case it will be found that the number of unique words in the other epistles also will be similarly, and in fact still more largely, reduced; and the net result will be to leave the comparison more unfavourable than ever for the Pastorals. But furthermore the same consideration must be applied to the relation between the Pastorals and the Christian writers of the early second century. And the result will then be to reduce almost to the vanishing point those elements in the vocabulary of the Pastorals which cannot be shown to belong to the current phraseology of the period to which our criticism assigns them. See below pp. 79, 83 f.

9. Words found in the LXX.

Jacquier (l. c.) thinks it important that many of the *Hapax Legomena* are found in the LXX and must therefore have been known to Paul. (So too Rüegg, 1898, p. 65.) But the 'critical' view does not rest on any contention that Paul was necessarily ignorant of all the words in question. Some words have a long life but a short vogue. As certain words current in the religious
speech of one period tend to drop out, and are replaced by others, this does not imply that those words pass completely out of knowledge, nor that these others have all been newly coined. And the fact that a given word, or group of words, is known and its meaning understood, does not at once prove that it is likely to be used, by a given author, or at a certain time. Nor can it be conceded as self-evident that Paul must have been familiar with every Greek word in the LXX and Apocrypha.


The long list of expressions occurring in these epistles, but not elsewhere in the N. T., includes a considerable number of classical words. Can this be explained by the suggestion that Paul may have devoted some leisure hours during his second Roman imprisonment to a study of the Classics?

Against this conjecture, and in favour of a different explanation, we have to weigh certain concrete facts. (1) Whatever Paul may have done during the sixties, some eminent Greek writers and teachers in the earlier years of the second century are known to have steeped themselves in the Classics. (2) The literature of that period shows a marked revival of classical diction. (3) The particular classical words now in question were demonstrably one and all in actual use during that period—which cannot be said, by a long way, of Paul's lifetime. See Chapter III and Appendix I, esp. 'Residue', pp. 83 f., 161 ff.

On the other hand, more than a few of the unique words in the Pastorals, so far from being in any sense 'classical', belong definitely to the vocabulary of a later Hellenism. Several of them are actually mentioned by the Atticist Moeris in a list of Hellenist substitutes for the correct Attic of his classical models. They are used, as he puts it, not Ἀττικῶς, but Ἑλληνικῶς, e.g. ἀνδροφόνος (Attic Lexicon, ed. Koch, 1830, p. 364), αὐθέντης (p. 54), βαθμός (90), κυθήθειν (215), μάμμη (237), ἕννοοχέω (248), παραθήκη (286), περίεργος (also Acts xvi. 19, p. 205), ὑδροποτεῖν (346).
III. THE LANGUAGE OF THE PASTORALS AND OF PAUL COMPARED WITH THAT OF THE APOSTOLIC FATHERS AND APOLOGISTS.

It is, then, admitted on all hands that the language of the Pastorals, compared with that of the other Pauline epistles, has a very considerable number of strongly marked peculiarities, and that these are such, both in kind and in degree, as to require a good deal of explanation, if they are to be reconciled with the traditional view. And while various explanations have been forthcoming which satisfy not only their authors but also a very large and influential body of scholars, members of the 'critical' school still remain entirely unconvinced, and persist in maintaining that the facts are incompatible with the Pauline authorship of these epistles. The result is for the moment a deadlock, each side holding its ground in more or less strongly entrenched positions, but failing to dislodge the other.

And yet both opinions cannot be right. One must be in the main true, and the other false. Either Paul wrote these epistles in substantially their present form, or else he did not. If they were really written during the first half of the second century by some ardent Paulinist, using and quoting largely from our ten Paulines, let his motives and abilities have been what they may, we should expect his work to have retained some mark of its true origin, and to yield up its secret sooner or later to persistent research and accurate observation. Some fresh body of evidence, emerging as the result of inquiries pushed further than before in some particular direction, may reasonably be expected at any moment to settle the matter once for all, one way or the other, in the minds of all who know the facts and desire only the truth whatever it may be. We should expect, for instance, to find our second-century Paulinist falling back unconsciously from time to time into the speech, as well as the ideas, of his own time. He could say much, but not all, that he had to say, in the ipsissima verba of his master.

Does our author in his choice of words, when diverging from the known phraseology of Paul, show such a marked affinity or identity of expression with those Christian writers who would on
the 'critical' theory be his contemporaries, as would seem natural on that theory, but highly improbable on the traditional hypothesis? Or does he not? That is a question of fact which has never yet been dealt with in any thoroughgoing fashion. Yet it is vital to the whole issue before us. And it can be answered on a scale, and with a degree of scientific accuracy hitherto out of the question, with the help of E. J. Goodspeed's excellent *Index Patristicus* (Leipzig, 1907) and *Index Apologeticus* (1912). We proceed therefore to supplement our comparison of the two vocabularies, Pauline and Pastoral, by a comparison of both with this *tertium quid*—the vocabulary of the Apostolic Fathers and Apologists. We take primarily the former, as covering approximately the period of fifty years A.D. 95-145; in the second place the latter group as showing the trend of Christian diction during the next thirty years, say A.D. 140-170.

It will be useful to bear in mind from the outset the relative bulk of the documents in question. The text of the Apostolic Fathers occupies some 200 pages in Lightfoot's smaller edition. The text of the N. T. fills 516, the ten Paulines 105, the Pastorals 13 3/4, and the other books of the N. T. say 395 pages of approximately the same length in Westcott and Hort. So the length of the Apostolic Fathers is rather less than twice that of the Paulines, and just two-fifths that of the entire N. T. The vocabulary of the Apostolic Fathers comprises some 4,020 words other than proper names, as compared with 2,177 in Paul and 848 in the Pastorals. The length of the Apologists is rather more than three-fifths of the N. T., and their vocabulary still larger than that of the Apostolic Fathers.

1. Of the 175 *Hapax Legomena* in the Pastorals no less than 61 occur in the Apostolic Fathers, and 61 in the Apologists, including 32 which are not in the Apostolic Fathers, making a total of 93. See Appendix I, A 1, p. 137 f. In the great majority of cases these appear not in any sense as possible quotations from the Pastorals, but in a distinct context of their own, proving that they did in fact belong to the current speech of the Church and to the working vocabulary of Christian writers and thinkers in this period.

The Pastorals share with the Apostolic Fathers from 4.4 words per page (1 Tim.) to 7.1 (Titus) which are foreign to the rest of
the N. T.; the Paulines, from 1 (Rom.) to 2:4 (Philem.), the majority having less than 1.5 per page. See Diagram IX, B.

With the Apostolic Fathers or Apologists, or both, the Pastorals share from 7:5 (2 Tim.) to 8:6 per page (Titus); the Paulines, from 1:6 (Eph.) to 3:2 (Phil.), with the rest under 2.5 per page. See Diagram IX, A.

These words are distributed over the whole body of writings before us, without exception; even the brief fragments of Papias, Melito, and Dionysius of Corinth adding their small quota to the general mass of evidence. Clement of Rome has 2, 1, 2 Clem. 7, Ignatius 13, Polycarp 6, the Martyrdom of Polycarp 4, the Didache 3, Barnabas 4, Hermas 21, the Ep. ad Diognetum 7, Papias 1, Aristeides 1, Tatian 19, Justin 40, Athenagoras 22, Melito 2, and Dionysius of Corinth 2. The lists are given in our Appendix I, E, pp. 150 ff. Twenty-nine occur in both groups.

If, in a number of instances, the word in question appears seldom, or only once, the same is true to a still greater extent of the Pauline Hapax Legomena. On the other hand we find more than a few of the Pastoral Hapax Legomena recurring again and again in one writer after another. Thus e.g. ἀγγέλων appears in 1 Clem., Ign., Plp., and Herm.—a dozen times; ἐπιγράφη 18 times, in 1 Clem., 2 Clem., Herm., and Jus.; ἀλλαζων 15 times, in Herm.,
The author of the Pastorals does speak the language of the Apostolic Fathers and Apologists, while diverging from that of other N.T. writers, to a degree wholly without parallel in the genuine Paulines.

2. But we have seen that, in addition to these *Hapax Legomena*, he uses a large number of words which, while they occur in other books of the N.T. (i.e. in Christian writings of the forty years or so following the death of Paul), are foreign to the working vocabulary of the Apostle, in so far as this is known to us from the ten surviving epistles.

Out of 131 such words, 100 occur in the Apostolic Fathers, 95 in the Apologists, 118 in one or the other, and 77 in both. See Appendix I, A 2, p. 138 f.

1 Clem. has 42 of these, 2 Clem. 21, Ignatius 26, Polycarp 14, the Martyrdom of Polycarp 18, the Didache 18, Barnabas 24, Hermas 54, the *Ep. ad Diognetum* 20, the fragments from Papias 3.

Aristeides has 6, Tatian 42, Justin 76, Athenagoras 37, and Melito (fragments in Eusebius) 3. See Appendix I, E, pp. 150 ff.

Combining these results with those in the last paragraph, we see that the Pastorals share with the Apostolic Fathers 161 words which do not appear in the Pauline epistles, with the Apologists 156, with both groups 106, and with one or the other no fewer than 211.

Each of the Pauline epistles has also naturally a certain number of words which do not appear elsewhere in the ten epistles, but do appear in one or both of the second-century groups. But whereas the Pastorals share with the Apostolic Fathers from 13·6 to 18·7 such words per page, the Paulines share from 4 to 7. See Diagram X, B, p. 71. So once again we find the ten Paulines forming a close, gradual, and orderly sequence among themselves. Once again the Pastorals show a violent
break away from that sequence. Only now, to the negative observation that the words in question were missing from the other Paulines, we have added the positive fact that they are present, some of them very frequently, in the pages of those Christian teachers who were, on our theory, the contemporaries of this author, but on the traditional view, were writing from 30 to 80 years after his death.

If the validity and significance of this result needs any further confirmation, it seems to find it in the entirely similar result of our parallel experiment with the Apologists. The Pastorals share with this second group of writers from 13-3 to 16-5 non-
Pauline words per page; while the corresponding figures for the ten Paulines range from 4·2 to 6·6 per page. See Diagram XI, C. In the same Diagram, line D, we show that the Pastorals have in common with both these second-century groups from 9·2 to 13·9 per page, the Paulines from 2·8 to 4·9. Finally with one or the other of these groups the Pastorals share from 18 to 21·4 per page, the Paulines from 5·1 to 8·7. Diagram X, A, p. 71.

This contrast between Pastorals and individual Paulines is still further accentuated, if we take into account the frequency with which the words in question recur in these later books.

We have shown (Appendix I, E, pp. 150 ff.) that Clement of Rome uses in common with the Pastorals 63 words never so far as we know employed by Paul, 2 Clem. 28, Ignatius 39, Polycarp 20, the Martyrdom of Polycarp 22, the Didache 21, Barnabas 28, Hermas 75, the Ep. ad Diognetum 27, and the fragments from Papias 4;
while Aristeides has 7, Tatian 61, Justin 116, Athenagoras 59, and the fragments from Melito 5.

The corresponding lists and numbers for the books of the N. T. are given in Appendix I, D, p. 148 f., as follows:—Matt. has in common with the Pastorals 34 non-Pauline words, Mark 32, Luke 56, John 25, Acts 60 (including 32 which are also in Luke), Heb. 39, 1 Pet. 17, 2 Pet. 18 (that is more than any other N. T. book, in proportion to its length), Jas. 15, the Johannine epistles 8, Jude 8, and Rev. 16.

Thus 1 Clement, Hermas, and Justin have each a larger number of such words than any N. T. book; Tatian and Athenagoras have as many as Acts and Luke, which have much the largest number in the N. T., and the total in the Apostolic Fathers exceeds that in the whole body of non-Pauline N. T. books by 30 (or 22.9 per cent.); while the total in the Apostolic Fathers and Apologists combined exceeds that in the N. T. books by 80 (or 61.1 per cent.). Yet the entire bulk of the Apostolic Fathers (200 pages in Lightfoot) is rather more than half that of these non-Pauline books of the N. T. (say, 395 pages). In proportion to their length, the Apostolic Fathers have more than twice as many non-Pauline words in common with the Pastorals as have the other books of the N. T. (The ratio is as 127 to 52.)

But the outstanding fact here is that one word in every four throughout the Pastorals, 211 out of 848, while foreign so far as we know to the vocabulary of Paul, is now proved to form part of the working vocabulary of Christian writers between the years A.D. 95 and 170—including many words which recur with some frequency in these writers (e.g. ἀνέκμε, δεσπότης, εὐσέβεια, μόδος, παρατέκμαι, ὀφέλιμος—all of which are found in all three Pastorals).

It does not seem possible to regard any one of the series of facts adduced in this section as merely accidental—still less the whole number.

3. But now what of the converse relation? In what numbers and in what proportions do the Pastorals share with the other Paulines words foreign to the vocabulary of these second-century writers? The total number is 18, of which 7 are to be found elsewhere in the N. T., viz. (ἀλωσις, εὐαγγελίστης, παρακείμαχω), ἀνυπόκριτος, μεσίτης, *ὀνειδισμός, *φιμώ. There remain 11
shared exclusively with Paul, viz. 6 in 1 Tim. *ἀλοάω, ναναγεώ, ὀδύνη, προκοπή, στρατεία, ὑβριστής, 4 in 2 Tim. ἄστοργος, μόρφωσις, (σπένδομαι), *σωρεύω, 1 in Titus ἀποστόμως.

Not one of these occurs in Paul himself more than twice, and only 3 more than once, 4 (marked by *) occur in his epistles only as part of quotations from the LXX, and 4 (in brackets) occur in the Pastorals in verses which are admittedly genuine.

4. Of the 50 words found in Paul and in the Pastorals, but not elsewhere in the N. T., 33 occur also in the Apostolic Fathers, 26 in the Apologists, 20 in both second-century groups, and 39 in one or the other.

Of the 492 common to Paul, the Pastorals and other N. T. books, 470 are in the Apostolic Fathers, 459 in the Apologists, 444 in both, and 485 in one or the other.

Of the 106 words found in all three Pastorals, 97 are also in Paul, 102 in both Fathers and Apologists, and 105 in one or other of these second-century groups. And the remaining word, νγιαίνω, occurs in non-Christian writers of this period, e.g. Lucian, in a similar figurative sense to that which it bears in the Pastorals. See Appendix I, 'Residue,' p. 165 (7).

Of 542 words common to Paul and the Pastorals, 503 or 92·8 per cent. are in the Apostolic Fathers also, 485 or 89·5 per cent. in the Apologists, and 524 or 96·7 per cent. in one or the other.

Of Paul's 2,177 words, 1,543 or 70·9 per cent. are in the Apostolic Fathers. Of the Pastorals' 848 words, 664 or 78·3 per cent. are in the Apostolic Fathers.

5. We have seen that 634 words used by Paul in his ten epistles have disappeared entirely from the current speech of second-century Christendom, as represented by the writings of the Apostolic Fathers. If we ask how many of these same words are conspicuous by their absence from the Pastorals, the answer is, no less than 595 or 92·3 per cent. One hundred and thirty-two occur in more than one Pauline epistle, and of these 123 are wanting in the Pastorals also. See Appendix I, F, pp. 153 ff.

Among these are included seventy-three words all found in more than one Pauline epistle, but never once in the Apostolic Fathers, nor in the Apologists. Seventy-two of these are wanting in the Pastorals also. Sixteen occur in three epistles—δοκιμή, ἐνδεῖξις, ἐπιβαρέω, εὐσχημόνως, καταλλάσσω, μετασχηματίζω, συναιχμά-
λωτος, νιθεσια, φιλοτιμομαι (none of which occur elsewhere in the N. T.), and ανάθεμα, ἀσπασμός, ἐκδίκησις, πανουργία, περιποίησις, προερώ, ἐνι, 3 in 4 epistles—ἀπεκδέχομαι, εὐδοκία, περισσοτέρως, 1 in 6 epistles—στήκω, and 1 in 7 epistles—συνεργός.

In view of the linguistic affinity already noted between the Pastorals and the writings of the Apostolic Fathers, the question is worth asking, whether or not the latter show a corresponding tendency to dispense with that same series of Pauline particles, &c., on the absence of which from the Pastorals so much stress has been laid in these pages.

The answer is that while none of them exhibits this tendency on quite the same scale as our author, it is nevertheless in varying degrees quite unmistakably present among them all.

Of the 'missing particles, &c.' mentioned on p. 36 f., the following are entirely absent from the Apostolic Fathers also; διόπερ, ἡτοι, ἐδε, μήτιγε, νη, πηλίκος, ὑπεναντίος, ὑπεράνω, ὑπερλιαν, ὅςπερεί. ἐφάπαξ, καθά, μενοῦνε, οὐ, ὅμως, τάχα, τούναντιον, ὑπερκεπερισσοῦ. ἐνι, ὄφελον, πλήν. μῆτρος. Only once altogether in the Apostolic Fathers, we find δεύτερο, ἔξαυτής, ἥνικα, μήτα. δές, ἡλίκος, κατενάπτιον. εἰκή, εἴπερ, ἀχρι. Most of these, it is true, occur but seldom in Paul himself. But this cannot be said of e.g. ἐκαστος, which occurs 42 times and in 9 epistles, but not at all in the Didache, once each in Polycarp (in a quotation), and in the Martyrdom of Polycarp, twice in Ignatius and in 2 Clem.; nor of σὺν (38 times in 8 Paulines), which our author seems to go out of his way to avoid as a preposition, though he uses it frequently as a prefix.1 It occurs once each in 1 Clem., Polycarp, and the Ep. ad Diognetum, and not at all in 2 Clem., the Didache, Barnabas, nor even in Hermas. With these writers too it might almost be said to have dropped out of use in favour of μετά, as a preposition, though still (as in the Pastorals) very common as a prefix. εἴτε occurs 63 times in Paul, and in 8 epistles, but not at all in 1 Clem., 2 Clem., Barn., Mart., Did., and only once each, in its double form, in Ignatius, Polycarp, and Hermas. ἐμός (23 times in 8 epistles)

1 συναπεθάνομεν 2 Tim. ii. 11 for ἀπεθάνομεν σὺν Rom. vi. 8; ἀσπάζωντας σὲ οἱ μετ' ἔμоι πάντες Titus iii. 15 for ἀσπάζοντα ἵμασ τὸν ἔμοι πάντες Phil. iv. 21; μετὰ τῶν ἐπικαλομένων τὸν κύριον 2 Tim. ii. 20 for σὺν τοῖς ἐπικαλομένοις τὸ δόμα τοῦ κύριον 1 Cor. i. 2.
is wanting in 2 Clem., Barn., Plp., Mar., Did.; and in 1 Clem. it appears in one passage only, repeated there half a dozen times, but all in quotation. διό (27 times in 8 epistles) is found neither in 2 Clem., nor in Mar., nor in Did., nor yet in Hermas, and only once in Dgn. and Ignatius. ὧστε (39 in 7) is not in Polycarp, nor in Dgn., nor in the Didache, and only once in Ignatius. καγώ (27/7) is missing in Plp., Did., Dgn., and occurs once each in 2 Clem., Mar., Barn.; twice in 1 Clem., but in quotations. ἕτε (16/7) is missing in Plp., Mar., Did. γε (13/7) is not in 2 Clem., Ign., Plp., Mar., Did. ἀρα (27/7) is not in Plp., Mar., Did., Dgn.—and once in 1 Clem. νυνί (18/6) is not in Barn., Ign., Plp., Mar., Herm., Did., Dgn. δπως (9/6) is not in Barn., Plp., Mar., Herm., Dgn. εμαυτοῦ (14/16) is not in 1 Clem., 2 Clem., Mar., Did., Dgn. οὐσπερ (14/5) is not in 2 Clem., Plp., Mar. οὐκέτι (15/5) is not in 1 Clem., Did., Plp., Mar., Dgn. ἄρη (14/5) is not in 1 Clem., 2 Clem., Barn., Ign., Plp., Mar., Did., Dgn. οὐχί (18/4) is not in 2 Clem., Plp., Mar., Dgn. καθάπερ (16/4) is not in 1 Clem., 2 Clem., Barn., Did., Ign., Plp., Mar., Herm.

The conclusion which we can hardly help drawing from these facts, is that a marked tendency to drop a considerable number of the Pauline particles, prepositions, &c., is shared by our author with the Christian writers of the early second-century, and forms one more link between him and them; while it is carried by him so much further than by any of them as to constitute a distinct idiosyncrasy of his style and diction.

Comparatively scanty as is our author's equipment in words of this class, it still includes several which lie outside the Pauline vocabulary, but inside that of the early second-century writers. We find μηδεποτε 2 Tim. iii. 7, nowhere else in the N. T., but in the Martyrdom of Polycarp, Hermas (several times), and Justin; ἀλλας 1 Tim. v 25, another Hapax Legomenon, very common in Hermas, and several times also in Justin, Tatian, and Athenagoras; μενοι 2 Tim. ii. 19, and in the Catholic Epistles, Papias, Hermas, Justin, and Athenagoras; μποτε 2 Tim. ii. 25, Gospels, Acts, Heb., 1 Clem., Barn., Ign., Did., Herm., and Justin; δι' ἥν αἰτίαν 2 Tim. i. 6, 12, Titus i. 13, Luke, Acts, Heb., cf. διὰ ταύτην τὴν αἰτίαν Heb., 1 and 2 Clem., Herm. (αιτία not in Paul).

But, it may be urged, the Pastorals have a considerable number
of such words—particles, &c.—in common with Paul. That is true. The actual number is 77. They are in fact the irreducible minimum without which it would be difficult to compose a telegram, and impossible to write a book or letter. The great majority of them occur not only in Paul, but also in every book of the N. T., and with barely an exception these 77 words are found both in the Apostolic Fathers and in the Apologists.

6. The entire vocabulary of the Pastorals has 542 words in common with Paul, 623 with the other books of the N. T., 664 with the Apostolic Fathers, 641 with the entire N. T. including Paul, and 735 with the Apostolic Fathers and Apologists combined. We may summarize the totals shared by these epistles with the other groups of early Christian writings.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pastoral</th>
<th>Paul</th>
<th>O. N. T.</th>
<th>1 Apos.</th>
<th>Apologists</th>
<th>Both A. F.</th>
<th>Either A. F.</th>
<th>N. T.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A1</td>
<td>175</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A2</td>
<td>131</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>131</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B1</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B2</td>
<td>492</td>
<td>492</td>
<td>492</td>
<td>470</td>
<td>459</td>
<td>444</td>
<td>485</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>848</td>
<td>542</td>
<td>623</td>
<td>664</td>
<td>641</td>
<td>570</td>
<td>735</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pages</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>395</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>318</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>518</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The Pastorals share with the—

- Apologists 156
- Both 106
- Either 211
- Either 93
- Both with Ap. Fathers and also with the Apologists 57
- Either 18
- Either 31

If now, for the purpose of our comparison, we choose to leave out of account the fragments of Aristeides, Quadratus, and Melito, and confine our attention, in the case of the Apologists, to the Dialogue and Apologies of Justin, the Or. ad Graecos of Tatian, and the Supplicatio of Athenagoras, we have in these and the Apostolic Fathers together a volume of about the same length as the N. T.—and the above figures will not be materially

---

1 O. N. T., i.e. other books of the N. T., not counting Paul.
2 N. T., i.e. whole N. T. including Paul.
3 i.e. both with the Apostolic Fathers and also with the Apologists.
4 i.e. either with the Apostolic Fathers or with the Apologists.
altered. A reduction of one word only\(^1\) representing what is shared by the Pastorals with the fragments in question exclusively. Here then are two volumes of about the same size, one comprising the Christian writings of the first two generations, say, the second half of the first century, including the ten epistles of Paul himself—the other, the Christian writings of the third and fourth generations, from A.D. 95 to 170. And the significant fact is, that the vocabulary of the Pastorals has actually sixty-one words more in common with the later than with the earlier group—a truly amazing circumstance, if Paul wrote them.

Again, taking the three groups of post-Pauline Christian writings, (a) the non-Pauline books of the N. T., (b) the Apostolic Fathers, (c) the Apologists, we find that (a) is nearly four times, (b) nearly twice, and (c) three times the length of the ten Paulines. Now (a), which is thus much the largest of the three groups, and stands nearest in time to Paul, has the smallest number of words in common with the Pastorals: whereas (b) which is decidedly the smallest of the three, but coincides with the period to which our criticism assigns the Pastorals, has in common with them easily the largest number of words—another circumstance difficult to explain on the traditional hypothesis.

Further, of the individual books contained in (a) it is with those which, on the 'critical' view at least, are dated last, towards the end of the first century, and after, that our epistles show much the closest affinity—especially the Lucan writings and 2 Pet. See Appendix I, D, p. 148 f.

If therefore the Pauline authorship of our epistles is still to be maintained, some explanation has to be produced for the curious fact that the other works not only of the same period, but of the same author, have considerably less in common with the epistles to Timothy and Titus than have those of the next three generations, and that too, in a degree which increases steadily as time goes on, till a climax is reached in the writings of the next generation but one after the death of their supposed author.

While we ransack the literature of the first century in vain for many of the characteristic expressions used by this author, we find most of them in the Greek literature of the first half of the second century. To find the rest, all that is necessary (as we

\(^1\) ἐπιθήσομαι, Melito.
EARLY SECOND-CENTURY WRITERS

shall show in full detail presently), is to extend our researches to a point still farther away, by twenty years, from Paul's lifetime—i. e. to the year A.D. 170.

7. Of the remaining 113 words in the Pastorals which are not to be found in Goodspeed's Indices Patristicus et Apologeticus, we have at least the cognates of fully the half, e. g:

If not ἀδηλίτης, we have ἀδηλος in 1 Clem. and Ath.

ἀποβλητος, we have ἀποβάλλω in 1 Clem., Herm., and ἀποβολή Ta.

ἀπαθησαυρίζω, we have θησαυρίζω Jus., and ἀποθήκη Herm., Jus.

γραάδης, we have γραΐδιος Ath., cf. γραολογία Ta.

γυμνασία, we have γυμνάξομαι 2 Clem., γυμνητέω Ta., -δομαι Dgn.

κοινωνικός, we have κοινωνός Herm., &c., -ωνέω Barn., Mar.

πυνῶς, we have πυκνότερον 2 Clem., Ign., -ός Ign., Herm., Did.

σκέπασμα, we have σκεπάζω 1 Clem., Herm., Jus.

στόμαχος, we have ἀστομάχητος Herm.

ἀπαίδευτος, we have ἀπαίδευτως Ta.

ἐπανόρθωσις, we have ἐπανορθόμαι Mel.

σωφρονισμός, we have σωφρονίζομαι Jus., -έω 1 Clem., &c.

αἱρετικός, we have αἱρετίζω 2 Clem., αἱρεσίς Ign., Mar., Herm., αἱρεσιώτης Jus.

ἱεροτρηπής, we have ἀγιοτρηπής 1 Clem., Plp., ἱερατεύω 1 Clem., &c.

κενοφωνίαι, we have κενοφονία 1 Clem., Ign., Herm., ὁμοφωνίαι 1 Clem.

νομίμως, we have νόμιμα 1 Clem., Herm., &c.

γενεαλογία, we have γενεαλογέομαι Ar.

νηφάλιος, we have νήφω Ign., Plp., &c.

For further instances see pp. 83 ff., and Appendix I, 'Residue,' pp. 161 ff.

8. We have now applied to the vocabularies of Paul and of the Pastorals respectively a number of tests, the result of which has been in every case to show that the ten Paulines form a closely connected series, from which no single epistle stands out in such a way as to suggest a doubt of its common origin with the rest. It is not even the case that any particular epistle
stands invariably at the top or the bottom of this series. From one point of view 1 Thess., from another 2 Thess., from another Col. takes the lowest place. Now Phil. and now 1 Cor. heads the list. The Pastorals on the other hand one and all consistently refuse to be brought anywhere near this series. They stand invariably at a greater distance from the nearest Pauline, than divides that epistle from the farthest of its fellows.

This being so, one final experiment remains. We have now to inquire whether, under similar tests, the Pastorals fall inside or outside the group of Christian writings to which, on our theory, they belong chronologically and in other important respects—

\[
\text{Diagram XII}
\]

Number of words, per page, not found elsewhere in the Ap. Fathers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>HERM</th>
<th>2CL</th>
<th>DID</th>
<th>POL</th>
<th>BAR</th>
<th>IGN</th>
<th>PAST</th>
<th>MAR</th>
<th>DGN</th>
<th>ICL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>14</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

not including their intrinsic worth, canonical authority, or inspiration. These belong of course to an entirely different field of inquiry, and must not be dragged in here to confuse the real issue.

Each of the writings grouped under the title Apostolic Fathers, has naturally a certain number of words not to be found in any of the others. They too form from this point of view a fairly connected series, and the Pastorals prove on examination to fall well inside it. They have a larger number of unique words to the page than Hermas, 2 Clement, Ignatius, or the Didache, but a smaller number than 1 Clement, the Martyrdom of Polycarp, or the Epistle to Diognetus. See Diagram XII.

There is thus no counterweight on this side to set against the
mass of positive evidence produced in the foregoing pages, not
to mention those which follow. We do not of course regard the
result of this last experiment as having any particular positive
importance, taken by itself. For this is obviously one of those
facts which, when first isolated and then unduly emphasized, could
be most misleading, and only yield their true significance, when
studied in connexion with the great body of related facts to
which they belong. Thus, it is also a fact, that every one of the
ten Paulines, when examined from the same point of view,
has a still smaller number of unique words per page, not only
than the Pastorals, but also than any of the Apostolic Fathers
themselves. From this a too hasty logic might draw the para-
doxical inference that, if the Pastorals are to be assigned to this
period, much more must the Paulines one and all belong to it
too! As an argumentum ad hominem, that would break down
over the fact that we have refrained from basing our opinion on
so insecure a foundation. As serious reasoning, it would be to
ignore, not only the whole of the evidence produced in these pages,
but various other known and relevant facts, e.g. that Clement
of Rome writing before the end of the First Century, names and
quotes the First Epistle to the Corinthians explicitly as the work
of the Apostle Paul (xlvii. 1), and shows certain acquaintance with
Rom. (xxxv. 5 f., xxxiii. 1, &c.). The combined vocabulary of
these early Christian writers is very extensive, and includes the
majority of Paul’s written words, not only as the greater includes
the less, but as we might expect remembering that they possessed,
studied, and revered his epistles. We do not propose to meet
one paradox with another, and suggest that the relative frequency
in the Pastorals, as compared with the Paulines, of words which
do not appear in the Apostolic Fathers is a further argument
against the theory that they were as well known, and as assidu-
ously read, as the Paulines, by these writers, or were included by
them in a Corpus Paulinum. We prefer to take our stand on
the more moderate statement that we have found nothing in the
vocabulary of the Pastorals to conflict with the opinion that their
author lived and wrote between the years A.D. 95 and 145,
whereas many facts hitherto unknown, if not unsuspected, have
emerged in the course of our comparative studies, which strongly
support, if they do not finally confirm, that opinion.
It has already been pointed out (p. 68) that in the vast majority of cases, the context, in which these Pastoral Hapax Legomena occur in the Apostolic Fathers and Apologists, is such as to exclude any thought of a quotation or direct reference to these epistles. If, in face of this fact, it should still be argued that the words in question may have come into the current speech of second-century Christendom via the study of these, along with other Pauline epistles, at any rate it will not be suggested that Epictetus, Appian, Galen, Polyaenus, M. Aurelius, &c., all enriched their Greek vocabulary in this way!


There remain eighty-two words (marked * in Appendix I, A 1) in the Pastorals, which are not to be found elsewhere in the N. T., nor in the Apostolic Fathers, nor in the Apologists, i.e. in no Christian writing prior to A. D. 170.

The question which naturally suggests itself at this point is: Are these words, or any large proportion of them, to be found in non-Christian writings of the same period, and more especially during the first half of the second century? This again suggests the larger question: Does the vocabulary of the Pastorals as a whole, but more particularly in its non-Pauline elements, coincide to any large extent with that of Epictetus, Dio Chrysostom, Dioscorides (c. A. D. 100), Plutarch (who died A. D. 120), Arrian (pupil and friend of Epictetus), Appian, Aelian, Philo Byblius, Ptolemaeus, Lucian, Polyaenus, Galen, the Emperor Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, and their contemporaries?

The answer to both these questions is in the affirmative. See Appendix I, 'Residue,' pp. 161 ff., where it is proved that at least fifty-seven of these 'Residue' words do occur, some of them with great frequency, in books usually dated between the years A. D. 95 and 170.

In the same literature our 'A' words generally—(A 1) Hapax Legomena and (A 2) non-Pauline words found in later books of the N. T.—appear, we might almost say, on every page. It is certainly no uncommon thing to find several of them in a single sentence.  

1 It has not seemed possible to print the large volume of evidence
We are left with 25 (out of the 306 non-Pauline words in the Pastorals), the occurrence of which in Greek writings of the period to which we have assigned these epistles, we have to admit our inability at present to demonstrate with chapter and verse. For several of these we have cognates so close that we feel justified in regarding them, in each case, as simply another form of the same word. Thus, (i) in 1 Tim., if we do not actually find αὐθεντέω between the stated limits (except in Papyri), αὐθενταίης appears in Hermas and in Moeris, αὐθεντικός in 2 Clem. The unique διαπαρατριβή is represented by διατριβή (Dio Chrys., Justin, Lucian, &c.), and παρατριβή (Athenagoras), cf. ἀποδιατριβῶ (Schol. in Lucian). Instead of ἔδραίωμα we have ἔδραίος in Ignatius, ἔδραξ in 1 Clem., Ign., Jus., Ath., ἔδραίοτης in Dio Chr., (cf. Reizenstein’s Poimandres, p. 343, ὁ βαθμὸς οὗτος, ὁ τέκνον, δικαιοσύνης ἐστίν ἔδρασμα), ἔδραιῶ in Lucian.

For τεκνογονία (Anth. P. ix. 22) we have in the Ep. ad Diognetum τεκνογονεώ. For ἐκζήτησις we have ἐκζήτεω very often in the Apostolic Fathers and in Justin, and ζήτησις in John, Acts, Justin, and Melito and Lucian. For (Anon. ap. Suid.) πρόκριμα (=prae-indicium) there is προκρίνω (in Justin and Melito). The use of ὑψηλοφροσύνη and ὑψηλόφρονω by Hermas, while 1 Clem. and Hermas have both ταπεινοφροσύνη and ταπεινοφρονεώ, shows that the absence of ὑψηλοφρονεώ is purely accidental.

(ii) in 2 Tim.: ἀντιδιατίθεμαι is represented by Justin’s ἀντιτίθεμαι in the same sense, and his διατίθεμαι, cf. ἀντιδιατάξομαι (Epictetus). We have not found the word itself before Longinus (c. A.D. 250). For ἀφιλάγαθος there is φιλάγαθος in Plutarch, and a host of words like ἀφιλόκαλος (Plut.), ἀπειράγαθος (Diod.), ἀφιλοξεία (1 Clem.), ἀφιλόσοφος (Jus.), while ἀφιλοκάγαβι is found in a second-century papyrus. συννακοπαθὲω is represented by συμπαθεῖω (Jus.) and κακοπαθεῖ (2 Clem. and Lucian).

(iii) in Titus. If not ἀθεορία, Justin (as well as Diodorus and Artemidorus v. 95) uses the adjective ἀθεορός, or in case the reading ἀδιαφθορία were preferred, we have ἀδιάφθορος in Plutarch and Galen. καλοδιδάσκαλος seems to be unique, but κακοδίδασκαλέω occurs in 2 Clem., κακοδίδασκαλία in Ignatius.

summarized in these four lines. But it is before us as we write, and is to our mind overwhelming.

G 2
Similarly ματαιολόγιος may be confined to Titus, but ματαιολογία is used by Polycarp and by Plutarch.

For several more of these 'Residue' words we have formations only a little less closely related, or at least so entirely analogous as to leave no shadow of difficulty in the way of our belief that they all belong to one family, and formed a part of the same working vocabulary. Thus λογομαχέω and λογομαχία have their counterpart in the λογοποιέω and λογοποία of Athenagoras. ὄρθοτομέω has its complements in the καινοτομέω of Tatian and Lucian, and the ὄρθογνώμονες of Justin. The word itself occurs in the LXX, Prov. xi. 5. ἔλεγμος also occurs fairly often in the LXX, while the form ἔλεγχος, as well as the verb ἔλεγχω, is common in this as in other periods. διδακτικός occurs so far as we know only in Philo, but its cognates in our period especially are legion. Another unicum, ἐπιδιορθῶ Boeckh, Inscr. ii. 409, is represented by the διορθῶ of 1 Clem. and others, as well as the ἐπανορθῶ, ὁμος of Epict., Galen, &c. ἀκατάγνωστος, which occurs in 2 Maccabees, has its close analogies in Justin's ἀκατασκεύαστος, and the ἀκατάληπτος of 1 Clem. and Athenagoras. With αὐτοκατάκριτος (Philo) compare 1 Clement's αὐτεπαίνετος, and the κατάκριτος of Ignatius.

Finally, καταστρηνιάω occurs in the 'Ignatian' Ep. ad Antioch., c. 11; φρεναπάτης is a derivative of the Pauline φρεναπάταω (Gal. vi. 3), but akin also to the φρενήρης of M. Antoninus and Lucian; καυστηριάζω is found in Strabo, in a second-century papyrus, and in the Schol. in Lucian; νεόφυτος ('neophyte') does not appear elsewhere, so far as we know, in this sense, till much later; and μεμβράνα is a Latin word and occurs in the 'genuine' verse 2 Tim. iv. 13. We do not think that any one will venture to deny, on the strength of any or all of these, the thesis which we now lay down as rigorously proved scientific fact—the language of the Pastorals is the Greek of the first half of the second century.

10. Summary of Linguistic Argument.

1. The language of the Pastorals shows on the face of it certain strongly marked peculiarities as compared with the other Paulines. A close and methodical examination very greatly
accentuates this contrast, and reveals further discrepancies none the less significant for being largely beneath the surface.

2. It is true that every Pauline epistle, and every sub-group of Paulines, is distinguished from the rest by its use of certain characteristic expressions, and its disuse of others. But when every allowance has been made for this wholly natural and obvious consideration, the fact remains that, under similar tests, the ten Paulines are still found to maintain among themselves a close and unmistakable family likeness. They form a clearly defined series; and the actual variations among them keep within certain limits, and are obedient to certain laws. The freedom and originality of the genuine Pauline spirit is in no way hampered by its obviously unconscious observance of these laws, and shows itself quite otherwise than by any transgression of these limits. The Pastorals refuse utterly to be brought within or near this series, and at every point exceed these limits and break these laws.

3. For such a discrepancy within the authentic works of a single author there is at present no known analogy in literature. Certain instances which have been alleged prove on examination to be no exception, but rather, most striking examples of those same laws which we have found governing the relations between the ten Paulines, but not between these and the Pastorals.

4. It is universally admitted that the linguistic peculiarities of the Pastorals are such as to call loudly for some explanation. But while numerous explanations have been forthcoming from the side of those who still adhere to the traditional view of their origin, neither singly nor collectively are these sufficient, in the judgement of critics, to neutralize the overwhelming cumulative effect of the great body of evidence pointing in an entirely different direction. The true explanation, they maintain, and the only one consistent with all the known facts, is that the Pastorals were not written by Paul, but by a devout and earnest Paulinist with our ten Paulines and, as many think, other genuine notes before him, during the half century A.D. 95–145.

5. In support of the critical view, it has now been demonstrated that these peculiarities of diction do in fact coincide with actual developments in the current speech of the Christian
Church, and in the working vocabulary of Christian leaders and thinkers during this very period. A large percentage of the words and expressions in the Pastorals which are foreign to the vocabulary of Paul, in so far as this is known to us by his genuine epistles, is found to belong to the vocabulary of the Apostolic Fathers. Of the Pauline words which appear to have dropped out of use among these writers nearly 94 per cent. are wanting in the Pastorals also. When the individual Paulines are submitted to similar tests, the result is once again to prove that among themselves they show a natural variation, but within certain fairly narrow limits. Once again they form a series. And the Pastorals stand outside that series but inside the series presented by the Apostolic Fathers. They have linguistically as much in common with these as these have with one another. And they have actually many more words in common with these and the Apologists together, than with the entire N. T. including the ten Pauline epistles.

6. Finally, it is proved that of those comparatively few remaining words in the vocabulary of the Pastorals, which do not occur in Christian writers between A. D. 95 and 170, practically the whole number did, nevertheless, belong to the current Greek speech, and are actually used by non-Christian writers of that period.
PART III

GENUINE PAULINE ELEMENTS IN THE PASTORALS

More than once in the preceding pages we have drawn attention to the fact that, along with so many expressions foreign to the diction of Paul, the Pastorals do unquestionably contain a notable quantity of definitely Pauline matter bearing the unmistakable stamp of the Apostle. The only question is—Who put it there? For, stated in these general terms, this fact is of course perfectly consistent with the theory formulated in our opening chapter (pp. 5 ff.), and is indeed essential to it, no whit less than it is to the view that Paul wrote the whole of these epistles, as they stand. We have now, therefore, to examine the relevant data more closely and in fuller detail, with a view to determining which explanation they seem to favour.

These elements in the language of the Pastorals, on the Pauline origin and character of which practically all parties are now agreed, fall under two distinct categories, one of which, the so-called ‘Personalia’, will come up for consideration presently.

I. PAULINE PHRASES.

The other, to which we must now turn our attention, is the extraordinary number of phrases, consisting sometimes of half a dozen or more words together, which coincid more or less closely, many of them exactly, with Paul’s own most characteristic expressions in the ten epistles.

The vital issue here is, whether these correspondences are simply what we ought to expect between different writings by the same author, or whether they point rather to the intermediate activities of another mind, weaving the words of his
great exemplar, along with his own, into one web and one design.

The actual phrases now in question may be seen by turning first to our text of the Pastorals (Appendix IV), where they are underlined, and references given in the margin, next, to (a) the Pauline Parallels (Appendix II, b), where they are collected and classified under the different Pauline epistles with which they show connexion. This is supplemented by (b) a list of words shared by the Pastorals with each single Pauline exclusively. See Appendix I, B 1 (and B 2).

Some of the correspondences produced are of course more striking than others. Some are only convincing when taken in conjunction with the whole body of evidence in which they play a very minor part. But taken as a whole, the facts here arranged seem to leave no room for doubt that our author must in any case have been deeply versed in those Pauline writings which have come down to us, and actually incorporated a number of words and phrases from each of them into his own three epistles.

While we have echoes from every period of Paul's epistolary career, and from every specimen of his literary craftsmanship, the most numerous and striking of these are taken, not from the latest group—as would have been natural, if he had written the Pastorals during and shortly before a second Roman imprisonment—but from Romans and 1 and 2 Corinthians, precisely those epistles which were fitted both by their length and their character to make the strongest impression, and with which, as a matter of fact, the Roman Clement and other Christian writers of the early second century show the closest and most certain acquaintance.1 Even 2 Thess. and Philem., short as they are, furnish several examples of what we should have to regard as very curious coincidences, if nothing more. With a helping hand from the other epistles, to which they are bound by so many ties, even these make a strong bid for recognition as giving evidence of definite literary filiation. But for the rest the proofs of such a connexion as we have suggested seem to us quite conclusive.

Now is there anything whatever, in the parallels and agree-

ments here adduced, inconsistent with the theory that the Pastorals were written early in the second century by a devout Paulinist, with the genuine epistles of Paul either directly before his eyes, or, as the result of close and reverent study, well in his mind?

If this question is answered, as we think it must be, in the negative, we may proceed a step further, and inquire whether the facts before us are not better explained in this way than on the supposition that Paul wrote the whole of these epistles in substantially their present form. It is, to say the least, somewhat surprising to find the Apostle quoting himself to such an extent as must, on the latter hypothesis, be admitted to be the case. It can hardly be called an illustration of that remarkable freshness and originality of expression, as well as of thought, which is so conspicuous in the other Pauline epistles, and is sometimes said to explain the very numerous and striking divergences from the phraseology of those epistles, which we have found in the Pastorals. It is true that Paul himself has, like most other writers, his own favourite turns of speech which keep cropping up in one epistle after another. But we have not found between any one genuine epistle and the others anything like the great series of such composite links connecting the Pastorals with them all. Indeed so numerous and striking are these verbal agreements that it becomes a very serious question whether Paul himself would have been able, or likely, to reproduce, purely from memory, such a variety of extracts from letters which he had dictated seven or eight years previously. Supposing that the Pauline authorship of the Pastorals were fully established, we should almost feel driven to conclude that the Apostle must have obtained, or retained, copies of his own earlier epistles, and refreshed his memory of their contents before setting to work on the Pastorals. Even granting that very remote possibility, and setting aside the whole of the evidence produced in our previous section (Part II), it seems particularly surprising that the Apostle should have thought it necessary to instruct Timothy to such an extent in identically the same terms as had been used, so many years before, in those letters (to the Thessalonians, Romans,\(^1\) Corinthians,\(^2\) Philippians,

\(^1\) xvi. 21. \(^2\) 1 Cor. iv. 17, xvi. 10, 2 Cor. i. 1, 19.
Colossians, and Philemon) in which this very Timothy had been expressly associated with himself.

It is in these very phrases that we find not a few of those undoubtedly Pauline words which appear, as was pointed out pp. 24, 26 f., once and only this once in the Pastoral, e.g. in 1 Tim.: B 1. ἐξαπατᾶω, ἀλοῶ, βοῦς, φιμῶ, ἀφορμή, ὄνθρος. B 2. ἀγιασμός, ἀράτος, ἀφθαρτός, γράφω, δύο, τρεῖς, ἐκτός, διαλογισμός, μεσίτης, παράκλησις, παρρησία, παραδίωμι, οἰκονομία, σάρξ, τέλος, ἐπιτρέπω, ψεῦδομαι.

In 2 Tim.: B 1. ἀτιμία, ἀλαξῶ, ἀστοργος, ἀδιάλειπτος μνεία, μόρφωσις, ὀστράκινος, συνβασιλεύω, συνζάω. B 2. ἀπιστεόω, δέσμιος, δέσμις, δέω, ἐγείρω, ἐπιποθέω, ἐπικαλοῦμαι, καταργέω, θάνατος, κλῆσις, λατρεύω, πληρῶ, χαρά, σκέψος, σπέρμα, συναποθήκω, (νεκρός).


But supposing that the presence of these Pauline expressions really did come about in the way here suggested, might we not reasonably expect to find at one point or another some indication of that fact? Would not our second-century Paulinist be almost bound to reveal himself sooner or later, if not by any downright blunder, at any rate by the occasional introduction of some Pauline phrase in a context to which it might be made to apply, but not with quite the same fitness as in its original setting, and not without some modification of its original meaning improbable in Paul, but natural in a secondary writer? Are there in these epistles any indications of this kind? We think there are.

Take, for instance, the familiar Pauline parenthesis, 1 Tim. ii. 7 ἀλῆθειαν λέγω, οὐ ψεῦδομαι = Rom. ix. 1—a remark which was wholly natural and convincing in its original setting. In telling the Christians at Rome of the intense spiritual agony and travail with which he longed incessantly for the conversion of his fellow-countrymen, and his readiness to lose his own soul for their sake (if that would have helped!), he felt quite reasonably that to people who did not yet know him personally such a statement might seem extravagant. Yet it was neither more nor less than the truth. So too when he was giving the Galatians an outline of his life and movements subsequent to his conversion, in order to convince them that his apostolic authority had indeed come to
him directly from God, and through no human mediation, it was entirely to the point for him to add the solemn asseveration Gal. i. 20 ἵδον ἐνώπιον τοῦ θεοῦ ὅτι οὐ ψεύδομαι. And no less appropriate was it, when declaring, paradoxically, as it might well sound to the Corinthians, that he gloried in his very weaknesses, for him to insist, 2 Cor. xi. 31 ὃ θεὸς . . . ὅδεν . . . ὅτι οὐ ψεύδομαι.1 But now the Apostle is writing neither to strangers who have never set eyes on him, nor to foolish and unstable minds bewitched and misled by influences foreign to the gospel (Gal. i. 6 ff., iii. 1, 2 Cor. xi. 4), but to his true and trusted friend, the loyal comrade of so many years. What was the point, and where the necessity of assuring Timothy, of all people in the world, that he really was speaking the truth, and not telling lies, when he asserted that he, Paul, had been appointed an Apostle and teacher of the Gentiles? By what conceivable possibility could it have occurred to Timothy to have denied or doubted that? But as addressed to the Timothy of our author’s time this solemn reminder, in the familiar phrase of the Apostle, has edge and point. It was needed, and there was some hope that it would not prove altogether ineffective.

Again, the ὃς in 2 Tim. i. 3 is certainly awkward and difficult to account for grammatically. There is much to be said for Holtzmann’s explanation (PB, p. 111) that it arises from the combination here of two Pauline phrases, one from Rom. i. 8 f. εὐχαριστεῖς τῷ θεῷ λατρεύω . . . ὃς ἀδιάλειπτως μνείαν ὑμῶν ποιοῦμαι κτλ., and one from 1 Thess. iii. 6 ἔχετε μνείαν ἡμῶν ἀγαθὴν, . . . ἐπιποθοῦντες . . . νυκτῶς καὶ ἡμέρας, κτλ. 2 Tim. i. 9 οὗ κατὰ τὰ ἔργα ἡμῶν looks like a slip for the Pauline οὐκ ἐξ ἔργων Rom. ix. 11, xi. 6, Gal. ii. 16, iii. 2, 5, 10, Eph. ii. 9. Paul says more than once, quoting Ps. lxiii. 13 = Prov. xxiv. 12, that God will reward every man κατὰ τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ Rom. ii. 6, 2 Cor. xi. 15, 2 Tim. iv. 14 (a genuine verse!).

Again, 2 Tim. ii. 11 f. εἰ γὰρ συναπεθάνομεν, καὶ συνχάσομεν, agrees almost verbatim with Rom. vi. 8 εἰ δὲ ἀπεθάνομεν σὺν Χριστῷ, πιστεῦομεν ὅτι καὶ συνχάσομεν αὐτῷ. But whereas in Romans the aorist is perfectly natural, for he is speaking of the death to sin which took place at conversion, here the reference is

1 If these words are taken as referring rather to the statement of fact which follows them, our argument remains the same.
clearly to literal physical death in martyrdom, which for the real Paul was not yet accomplished, though so near at hand when he wrote, if indeed he did write this verse to Timothy. This, and the significant transference of σών from preposition to prefix (see p. 75), seems once more to suggest the secondary writer quoting a familiar saying of the Apostle in a way in which we cannot quite think that the Apostle would have quoted himself. This impression would be still further confirmed if we were sure that the usual translation of πιστός ὁ λόγος is correct. It seems a little strange to find even an apostle quoting his own ‘sayings’ with so much solemnity as ‘faithful’. But elsewhere in the Pastorals ὁ λόγος consistently means the Word of God, the Gospel message of salvation; and we incline to believe with Holtzmann that it does so here. In that case the γάρ introduces not a ‘faithful saying’, but a sort of proof-text, showing that the Divine Promise is, like the God who gave it, worthy of all trust.

A glance at our text (Appendix IV, pp. 183 ff.) will show that these borrowed Pauline phrases are distributed throughout the whole body of the Pastorals. Not quite evenly, however. There are passages like 2 Tim. i. 1-15 which consist almost exclusively of such phrases, so that practically the whole of the materials are, in this sense, not only Pauline, but are Paul himself, his ipsissima verba, and only the arrangement, and an occasional touch of foreign colour, betrays the later mind. On the other hand, there are pages, like 1 Tim. v. 1-19, vi. 7-21, 2 Tim. ii. 15-iii. 6, Titus i. 13-ii. 15, in which the Pauline echoes almost die away, where our author is evidently composing more and more freely, and in doing so falls unconsciously but inevitably into the vocabulary of his time, and into a general type of composition, syntax, grammar, style, and diction which we come to recognize as peculiarly his own. Here the number of words foreign to the genuine Paulines rises to its maximum—40 to 46 per page; two lines together, at most, free from such words; and sometimes four or five lines together with hardly a Pauline word in them, e.g. 1 Tim. vi. 18-21a, 2 Tim. iii. 2-5, Titus i. 7b-8, ii. 1-5a, iii. 9-11.

1 And in the four other verses where this phrase occurs.
And yet again there are places where phrases from the genuine Paulines, and non-Pauline terms in use among second-century writers, alike recede, and we find ourselves suddenly back in the familiar atmosphere, listening to the familiar accents, no echo this time, but the real Paul, or else the most marvellous imitation in all literature! It is precisely this last observation which leads us to lay down our second thesis,—

II. Personalia.

This author must have had before his eyes, and has incorporated bodily into his epistles and so has preserved for all time, a certain amount of genuine Pauline material, which cannot be identified with any of the surviving epistles, and would otherwise, in all human probability, have been lost beyond recall.

In proof of this proposition it will be best to take as our starting-point those verses about which there is the greatest unanimity among critics and least room in fact for differences of opinion as to their authenticity—2 Tim. iv. 6-22 and Titus iii. 12 f. There is absolutely no trace here of the doctrinal controversies, nor of the ecclesiastical situation, with which the bulk of these epistles is occupied. Instead we find a series of personal details, greetings, messages, items of news, small commissions, names—some referring to people and places already familiar to students of Paul's life, others to companions and fields of service of which we otherwise know nothing. These Personalia are so vivid, so concrete, so entirely in the vein of the references to be found in every letter that Paul ever wrote, that, we may safely assert, no one would ever have dreamed of doubting their authenticity, had it not been for the context in which they occur.

1.

With regard to these Baur wrote, 'One must admit that in this respect the epistle (2 Tim.) does not lack colour and life. But this is only the happy thought of invention; and we must not let ourselves be led away by it into mistaking what is mere appearance and copy for truth and reality' (PB., 1835, p. 68).

Similarly Holtzmann, 'Whoever once undertook to write in Paul's name, was bound in the nature of things to do what he could to render the fiction as convincing as possible. The
analogy of the genuine epistles was bound to suggest to him a certain quantum of personal notices' (PB. 125).

But what if he had the real thing ready to his hand in the form of actual notes written by the Apostle himself to one or another of his companions? In that case it would have been superfluous, and a waste of energy, to say the least, if he had set these aside in favour of laborious imitations of his own.

Holtzmann had considered this hypothesis (which had been put forward as early as 1843 by Credner and Hitzig, but was soon abandoned by the former), and he admitted frankly that there is not a word to be said a priori against the abstract possibility, and even probability, that Paul may have written such brief personal notes to private friends, which would remain for a time in their possession, and later on, coming into the hands of our second-century Paulinist, might have been used by him as a welcome basis for the composition of new apostolic letters. He admitted further, and indeed showed in detail, that each separate item, taken by itself, is capable of being fitted into one moment or another in Paul's known life. But what seemed to him decisive against this, as the true explanation of the facts before us, was the utter impossibility of finding any one situation into which they can all be fitted. Convincing enough as they are when taken singly, he shows how, as a whole and collectively, they contradict each other at point after point. From this he draws the inference that they cannot be authentic messages from the real Paul, but must be regarded as belonging to the Pauline mask assumed by the auctor ad Timotheum.

' This mere imitation soon gets itself involved in internal contradictions, and so betrays itself for what it is. Thus we read here in rapid succession, 2 Tim. iv. 11, 16, "only Luke is with me", and "at my first defence no one stood by me", and between stands, iv. 12, "Tychicus I sent to Ephesus", with no connecting link between these sentences. We are to suppose that "all" have forsaken the captive. Yet, as Alexander is an opponent, only Demas is actually named, v. 10. For the με ἐγκατέλιπεν does not refer to Crescens and Titus, as does the ἐπορεύθη. These seem rather to have been sent, like Tychicus, in the interests of the Mission. And if "all" have deserted the Apostle, and only Luke is with him, what about
the companions named in verse 21? Such lapsus memoriae et calami readily befall one who is thinking himself into a strange situation, but not one who really is lying forsaken in prison' (ib.).

Holtzmann and others before and after him have in fact made out an unanswerable case for their thesis, that there is no single moment in Paul's life, as known to us from Acts and the ten epistles, into which these personal references as a whole can by any ingenuity be inserted. There is no need to labour this point, for it is one of the very few on which all parties are now agreed. Isolated details might at need be explained away. We might say that Luke was the only companion still sharing Paul's imprisonment, and yet a few leading members of the Roman Church might have found courage and opportunity to visit him and send greetings to Timothy. But the whole picture is simply riddled with inconsistencies. It is like a jig-saw puzzle, or rather, several, of which the separate pieces, once mixed together, defy all efforts to make them fit one another so as to form one complete picture within the required frame.

But that the inference drawn by Holtzmann from this undeniable fact was nevertheless a mistaken inference, is common ground to practically all present-day scholars. A necessary inference it certainly is not. For there are at least two other alternatives, one of which, it is now agreed, he dismissed too lightly—though it is by no means agreed which of the two this is. To these alternative explanations, and the choice between them, we shall return presently. Meanwhile, it may be taken as agreed further that Holtzmann's conclusion is not only needless, but is also, to say the least, extremely improbable. It does not do justice to the extraordinary realism which its advocates, from Baur onwards, could not help seeing in these personal details, but of which they failed to grasp the true significance. These are too vivid, individual, concrete, and altogether too life-like to be dismissed as mere fiction—at any rate until every other possibility has been exhausted. We have no right, it is true, to deny dogmatically and a priori the possibility of a second-century Christian possessing a grain of historic imagination; nor does the mere fact that some of his contemporaries seem to have been singularly lacking in this respect justify us in setting any arbitrary or narrow limits to his gifts in this direction. Fiction is often more realistic
than the report of an eyewitness. But as fiction these details would be not only good, but incomparably and incredibly true to life. The most inimitable features of the most inimitable style in all literature are too faithfully reproduced. They have the genuine Pauline stamp. They ring true.

In order to satisfy ourselves that this is no merely subjective impression, but is based on objective and concrete facts, let us now inquire what happens when these alleged Pauline fragments are isolated from their present context and subjected to the same linguistic tests as we have applied to the epistles as a whole. Do they, or do they not survive the ordeal? The answer is in the affirmative. Of all that has been said in Part II about the far-reaching and deeply underlying divergences of the Pastorals from the normal Pauline type, hardly a line applies to the paragraphs of which we are now speaking. They keep well inside the normal Pauline number of *Hapax Legomena* and of other words not found elsewhere in the ten Paulines. And such as there are, in no way suggest a second-century origin, nor raise a doubt of their Pauline authorship. Phrases which might have been borrowed from the ten Paulines are conspicuous by their absence, or at least their rarity. For the rest we have Pauline words used in a perfectly Pauline way. And of these (to clinch all) a really extraordinary number, 40 or more to the page (practically every significant word), make here their solitary appearance in the Pastorals.

(i) Apart from the first and last pages of 2 Tim., the lowest number of non-Pauline words in any complete page in the Pastorals, counting repetitions, is 22, the highest 46, and the average 35.1. On the first page of 2 Tim. which is largely a mosaic of phrases from the ten Paulines, there are 16, on the last 11. The average throughout the ten Paulines is 13.2, the range from 8 to 17.3. (See Diagram III, p. 25.)

The lowest number of N. T. *Hapax Legomena* in any other complete page in the Pastorals is 13, the highest 23, the average 17.4. On the first page of 2 Tim. there are 11, on the last 4. In the Paulines they range from 3.3 to 6.2, the average being 4.5 (or, including repetitions, from 4, 2 Thess.–Philem., to 7.7, 2 Cor.)

Of these four, two, μεμβράνα and φαιλόνης, are Latin words and do not occur in Goodspeed; ἀνάλυσις only once, in 1 Clem.;
χαλκεύς once each in Hermas and the Ep. ad Diognetum. In Titus iii. 12 f. there are no Hapax Legomena.

Of the other non-Pauline words in these paragraphs, νομικὸς does not occur in Goodspeed, λέων is a quotation from Ps. xxii. 22, ἀπολείπω occurs in both groups, but in a different sense from that which it bears here. If Paul does not happen to use λίαν, δρόμος, or χείμων, he has at any rate ὑπερλίαν, ἔδραμον, and παραχειμάζω; and no one would think of calling either of these words, nor yet κρῖτης nor λείπομαι, a link with the vocabulary of second-century Christendom. They fall, every one of them, under the category referred to on p. 51 f. (iii). Their absence from Paul's other epistles and their presence here is simply and adequately explained by the remark, that he had no occasion to use them elsewhere, and now that he has the occasion, they were the natural words for him to use.

(ii) On the other hand we find, in these short paragraphs, the following long list of words which do occur in Paul's epistles, but are not found elsewhere in the Pastorals—in Titus iii. 12 ff., πέμπω, ἐκεί, κέκρικα, παραχειμάζω, σπουδαίως, προσέπμω, ἀναγκαῖος, χρεία, ἀκαρπος, ἀσπάζομαι (bis), φιλέω.

In 2 Tim. iv. 6–22—σπένδομαι, ἐφίστημι, τελέω, λοιπόν (adv.), ἀπόκειμαι, στέφανος, ἄγαπάω (bis), βασιλεία (bis), ἕγκαταλείπω (bis), ἀποστέλλω, βιβλίον, ἀρθενέω, ἀπολογία, παραγίνομαι, λογιζομαι, ρύομαι (bis), ἐπουράνιος, στόμα, ἀσπάζομαι (bis), while ἀναλαμβάνω, μένω, παρίστημι are used in different senses from those which they carry elsewhere in the Pastorals.

In the remaining verses in the body of 2 Tim. which we, in common with many others, regard as genuine, the following Pauline words make their only appearance in the Pastorals—πολλάκις, ἀλυσις, σπουδαίως, ξητέω, εὐρίσκω (bis), παρὰ-κυρίον, διαγμός (bis), πάθημα, ὀλο (bis), ὑποφέρω, ρύομαι (bis), κρίνω, βασιλεία, ἐφίστημι, ἐναγγελιστής: and the following, if unique in Paul, are at least equally so in the writer of these epistles (the first five are also missing in the Apostolic Fathers)—νομικὸς (subs.), φαίλωνς, μεμβράνα, εὐκαίρως, ἀκαίρως, χειμών, χαλκεύς, λίαν, λέων, ἀναψύχω, βέλτιον, ἄγωγή, ἀνάλυσις, δρόμος, κρῖτης.

(iii) It is precisely in these passages that we find those examples of the characteristic Pauline Anacolutha and Oratio Variata (2 Tim. iii. 11, iv. 1, 17), of the familiar play on words
(εὐρέν μὲ ... εὑρεῖν ἐλεος 2 Tim. i. 17 f., ἐπίστηθι ... ἐφέστηκεν iv. 2, 6, εὐκαίρως ... ἀκαίρως ... ὁ καιρός ἰδ., πληροφόρησον ... σπένδομαι iv. 5 f., εὐχρηστος iv. 11, cf. pp. 112 f., 122 f.), and the parentheses (2 Tim. i. 18, iv. 8, 14, 16), which have sometimes been used, too hastily, to prove the 'genuineness' of the Pastorals as a whole.

(iv) When submitted to the same acid tests which have led us to deny the Pauline authorship of these epistles in their present form, the passages now in question thus emerge with their authenticity more than ever confirmed. They stand side by side with the more certainly genuine of Paul's epistles, and are separated from the bulk of the Pastorals by the same gulf which divides these from the genuine epistles.

But still further, not only can the diction of these passages be truly described as identical with that of the ten Paulines generally. In each separate instance, we find on examination special points of resemblance, clear, definite, and unmistakable, with the Paulines of precisely that period to which the subject-matter of the fragment in question has led us to assign it. See pp. 118 ff.

This fact stands in striking and significant contrast with that other fact, to which we have already drawn attention (pp. 24, 48 f.), that when treated as a homogeneous unit, the Pastorals can neither by any ingenuity be made to fit any single situation in the known life of Paul, nor do they show any special linguistic affinity with the later epistles, such as we should reasonably have expected to find, on the hypothesis that they were written last of all, during a period of release and a second Roman imprisonment.

And yet again, all these observations together cast into high relief one other fact, which emerged in the course of our previous investigations, viz. that 2 Tim., when treated as an integral whole, consistently stands much nearer to the genuine Paulines than do the other two Pastorals. (Diagrams I and II, pp. 21, 23.)

This is due, as we now see, simply and solely to the page and a half of admittedly genuine Pauline matter included in this epistle. When this is eliminated, and the suspected paragraphs are examined by themselves, they are found to contain just as large a proportion of non-Pauline words as the other two Pastorals. In fact the record page in all these epistles is 2 Tim. ii. 15–iii. 6,
with 46 such words. This is followed first by half a page or so of composite matter, in which first- and second-century elements alternate, and then by that page of personal references the authenticity of which we have seen no reason to doubt, but every reason to affirm. See Diagram III, p. 25.

We have now brought into juxtaposition a whole series of undeniable facts which, even when regarded in their separate groups, all seem to tell strongly against the traditional opinion and in favour of the view advocated in these pages. Their combined effect seems to us quite irresistible in its cogency. It clinches and completes our linguistic argument. If there be an explanation of these various results, by which they can all be made to seem consistent with either (1) the Pauline authorship of these epistles as a whole, or (2) the non-Pauline authorship of these Personalia, we must confess that it has hitherto entirely escaped us.

Again, no adequate explanation has ever yet been given by Baur, Holtzmann, or their followers, of the curiously uneven way in which these Personalia are distributed among our three epistles. Why should 2 Tim. have the lion's share, and 1 Tim. little or nothing? On Holtzmann's principles our author was just as much 'bound to do what he could to give an appearance of probability to his fiction' in the one case as in the other. And if bound to try, able also to succeed. For the author who was, ex hypothesi, capable of inventing such life-like imitations of Paul's manner once, and twice, was surely equally capable of doing the same again for the third time. Practice makes perfect. We should have expected to find the circumstances and personalities of the Ephesian church reproduced with a touch no less sure and convincing. But nothing of the kind. After the half-hearted beginning 1 Tim. i. 3, he breaks off in the middle of his sentence; qualifies in ii. 15 any too definite expectations raised by the half promise in vs. 14; and hardly seems to make another effort, unless we are to regard the apostolic panacea (1 Tim. v. 23) as a last experiment in this direction. Granting that he had already used up the most interesting moment in Paul's life—the eve of

1 Further, the elimination of these admittedly Pauline passages involves a reduction in the total number (542) of words common to the vocabularies of this writer and of Paul, by between fifty and sixty, and the addition of these to the number of characteristic Pauline terms not used by this writer on his own account.
his martyrdom, when, if ever, a man’s utterances will be received as prophetic—there was still something more than this to be made of that dramatic crisis which compelled him to turn his back for the last time on the scene of so many labours, and drove him from the midst of so many friends to enter on a new stage of his life-journey.

Besides, the writer who was gifted enough to invent touches like the οπένδομαι, &c., in verse 6, the εὐχρηστος in verse 11, the φαιλόνης, &c., in verse 13, and in fact the whole section 2 Tim. iv. 6–22, would surely have been capable of avoiding some of its more glaring inconsistencies and discrepancies. He would not have made Paul follow up the noble and impressive announcement of his immediate ‘departure’ by a series of commissions, which, if he meant what he said and said what was true, it would have been a physical impossibility for Timothy to receive and carry out till long after it was too late. He would not have made the Apostle waste his last moments in telling Timothy what must have been stale news—like the mission of Tychicus to Ephesus, the detention of Erastus at Corinth, and of Trophimus at Miletus, and the result of that defence which Timothy himself had been sent to Philippi on purpose to report to their friends there.

Nor is it easy to assign any really satisfactory motive for such details as e.g. the cloak and parchments. If they were intended to deceive us into the belief that Paul himself really did write this passage, they have certainly achieved a marvellous success—in spite of Baur’s warnings. But in that case, what becomes of Holtzmann’s theory of a perfectly naïve and innocent pseudonymity? It would then be difficult to avoid the crude commonplace verdict of a fraud and a forgery, deliberate, and, we should have to admit, almost diabolically clever. It would be difficult to sustain Holtzmann’s antithesis between our author, with his high purpose, pure conscience, and exalted motives, and ‘the real falsarius, more interested in his mask’ than in the ideas he wished to introduce beneath it. But failing that, what other motive can we assign? Is it purely an artistic touch? If so, it is the most consummate art, amounting to positive genius; and we wonder why there are not more ‘happy thoughts’ of the same kind scattered through these epistles. But convincing as this detail is in itself, the same can hardly be said of its present setting. Holtzmann is sure that our Paulinist ‘never thought of a second imprisonment.
In 2 Timothy there hovered before his mind the situation Acts xxviii. 30 f'. (H. PB. p. 51.) So far we may agree. But then there must also have hovered before his mind in this connexion the situation Acts xx 13 f., when Paul was last at Troas. On that occasion the Apostle set out alone towards the end of April (Ramsay, Paul the Traveller, p. 289), to walk to Assos, where he joined the ship in which his companions had meanwhile sailed from Troas. Now, about the previous midsummer, when he left Troas in the opposite direction (2 Cor. ii. 12 f., cf. 1 Cor. xvi. 8), it was as natural for him to leave his heavy cloak behind, as it was for him to claim it again before the winter storms began (p. 117 ff.). But on Holtzmann's theory the inventor of this realistic touch spoiled it by requiring his readers to suppose (a) that Paul let slip the natural and obvious opportunity to send his property by the ship in charge of Luke or another, and (b) that he then allowed it to lie unclaimed at the house of Carpus through four long winters, only to send for it now in his last hours against that fifth winter which he knew he would not live to see. Considered as fiction, our Personalia would seem to lose more than they gain in verisimilitude from the necessity for such assumptions.

No, Holtzmann's view shares at this point with the Traditional opinion a certain prima facie simplicity, which, however, proves on closer examination to be illusory, and involves us more and more deeply, the further we follow it, in hopeless entanglements. We are prepared for the inevitable blunders of the ordinary dull secondary writer, who tries in vain to put himself into another man's place, and betrays himself at every turn by ineptitudes, inconsistencies, and contradictions. Nor have we any rooted prejudice against the hypothesis of a second-century Christian possessing very high gifts of creative imagination. But two such persons rolled into one, and then identified with the author of the rest of the Pastorals, make too complex a personality altogether. The mental agility which needed no second imprisonment theory to provide time for a certain development in style, diction, &c., but could leap at a moment's notice, between one dip of the pen and another, from the very tone, speech, and accents of the Apostle to the current phraseology of the early second century and back again—taxes our credulity beyond the breaking-point. If five years were not enough for such a change, still less five minutes!
We conclude therefore that modern scholarship is right in refusing with one voice, though for a variety of reasons, to regard these Personalia as pure fiction invented by the auctor ad Timotheum et Titum in order to lend verisimilitude to the rest of his handiwork.

And we turn back accordingly to consider those remaining alternatives one of which Holtzmann dismissed, as we have seen, too lightly. We speak of alternatives. But according to many scholars there is only one remaining alternative. If Paul wrote these personal references himself, and if there is no single moment in his known life at which he could have written them, they argue, then it must follow, as the night the day, that he must have written them at some later period than that known to us from Acts and the other Paulines. In other words, these verses presuppose, and are a primary witness for, that very release, eastern journey, and second imprisonment on which, as is now agreed with almost complete unanimity among 'conservative' scholars, the 'authenticity' of these epistles depends.

The objections to this solution in either of its forms—whether as involving the genuineness of the entire three Pastorals, or only that of these Personalia—are as follows:


(i) The Evidence of Eusebius.

Our earliest explicit reference to such a second Roman imprisonment following a period of release, occurs in Eusebius, some 260 years after an event, or series of events, which, if they really took place, were of the very first importance and deepest interest to the Christian Church as a whole, and must, especially on the modern hypothesis, have been widely known both in the East and in the West, and of course in Rome itself. That our knowledge of Peter's last years is equally hazy\(^1\) is true enough, but hardly removes the difficulty. However, 'all things come to him who waits,' and at last in A.D. 324 we find the statement (\textit{H. E.} ii. 22), following a reference to the close of Acts: 'At that time, then, after making his defence, he is said (\textit{λόγος ἐξει}) to have

\(^1\) Harnack, \textit{AC. L.} i, p. 240.
been sent again on the ministry of preaching, and having entered
the same city (Rome) a second time, to have ended his life with
martyrdom. While a prisoner in bonds he writes the Second
Epistle to Timothy, in which he mentions both his former
defence and his imminent end. Receive his own testimony on
these points.' Then follows a quotation and exposition of 2 Tim.
iv. 16 f., 6, 11, in which it is argued that the 'first defence' implies
a previous captivity. 'Thus much we have said to show that
the Apostle's martyrdom was not accomplished during that
sojourn of his at Rome in which Luke wrote.'

There is thus no doubt that by the end of the first quarter of the
fourth century 'it was said', and Eusebius believed it, and argued
for it, that Paul entered on a new lease of life, and a new stage
of preaching activity, after the imprisonment recorded in Acts
xxviii.

Now Eusebius has preserved many a priceless record of historic
fact which would otherwise have been lost to us—but also many
a baseless legend. The question is, to which category the state-
ment before us belongs. For, judged by modern standards, it is
clear that 'his judgement was decidedly inferior to his erudition'.

We look to see whether in this instance, as in so many others,
he is able to support his own statement by a quotation from, or
at least a reference to, some earlier authority. But there is
nothing of the kind here. The only evidence that he can, or
at any rate does, produce, is a bit of more than questionable
exegesis from one of the very epistles whose authenticity is now
supported in turn by reference to his statement. The allusion to
a 'first defence' 2 Tim. iv. 18 clearly implies a 'second defence'.
We shall show in due course where and when and in what cir-
cumstances both first and second defences were made (p. 121 f.).
But that it also implies an acquittal by Caesar, release, and
second Roman imprisonment, with an interval of from three to
five years between, crowded with apostolic activities, journeys
to Spain, Greece, Macedonia, Asia, and Crete, is hardly a tenable
proposition.

But if Eusebius and those who follow him in this matter are
utterly wrong in their exegesis here, we are thrown back for the
rest upon the phrase λόγος ἐχει, with which he introduces the

1 Bright, Intr. to the H. E. 1872, p. xlvi.
whole story. What exactly does this phrase cover? How much can we legitimately infer from it? As the words are in themselves so elastic and capable etymologically of such varied shades of meaning, it seems worth while to inquire in what other passages they recur. The result is not very encouraging for those who wish to lay any stress on the historicity of this particular incident. Eusebius uses the same formula to introduce (a) the legend that Philo had familiar conversation with St. Peter in Rome during the days of Claudius (H. E. ii. 17); (b) the tradition that the body of Ignatius was devoured by wild beasts (H. E. iii. 36)—the only evidence produced, in this case also, being that of Ignatius himself (in Rom. 4 f.); (c) the opinion that Tatian was the founder of the Encratite heresy (H. E. iv. 28)—‘a sect which existed before his time’ (Harnack, Enc. Brit., s.v. Tatian); (d) the legend of the Thundering Legion (H. E. v. 5, twice over in this connexion); (e) the story that Pantaenus found in India the Gospel of Matthew in Hebrew, which had been brought thither by the Apostle Barnabas (H. E. v. 10).

(ii) Once this extension of Paul’s life on the strength of 2 Tim. iv. 16 f. had thus won a place in ‘history’, it was only natural that later writers should perpetuate the same error. So Jerome, de Vir. Ill. v, who also repeats the story about Philo and Peter, ib. 11; Theodoret, Hist. Eccl. ii. 22 and Comment. ad comma 17 alterius ad Tim. epist.; Epiphanius, Contra Carp. Haer. vii. 6; Chrysostom, Euthalius (interval of ten years between the two imprisonments! Zacagni, 532, Zahn, Einl. i. 453), Nicephorus Callisti, Eccl. Hist. ii. 33 f., who incorporates large sections of the text of Eusebius, and places not only 1 Tim. and Titus but also the epistles to the Corinthians, Galatians, Colossians, Philippians, Thessalonians, as well as πρὸς Ἰουδαῖος (=Heb.) and Romans in the later period thus gained in Paul’s life.

Of course these additional links add nothing whatever to the strength of the chain as a whole.

(iii) We have now therefore to turn back and examine the series of highly debatable inferences and deductions upon which this hypothesis of a second imprisonment really depends, in the absence of any definite statement or explicit reference to it in any Church writer prior to Eusebius.

The principal elements in this series are:
A. The argument from the Chronology of Paul's life.
B. The evidence of Clement and of the Muratorian canonist.
C. The evidence of the Personalia in the Pastorals.

A. Chronology. First and foremost comes the argument from chronology, or rather, from two rival and mutually contradictory chronologies—the usual conservative scheme, which brings Paul to Rome for the first time in A.D. 60/61, and fixes his death as late as 66/7, and Harnack's own scheme 1 which brings Paul to Rome as early as 56/7 and fixes his death in 64.

The one point in common between these two schemes is that both leave an interval of five or six years between the close of Acts and the death of Paul, to be filled up somehow.

For the rest, all the weight of learning and force of conviction brought to bear in defence of either theory must needs go to weaken the other, making it the more difficult for us to regard an inference drawn from either of them as being, in the present state of our knowledge, 'an assured fact of history'. The truth is that the chronology of Paul's life is an enormously difficult and intricate subject, covering an immense amount of ground, and one on which experts are still far from having arrived at an agreement. 2 A minute examination of the relevant data would carry us far beyond the scope of the present work; but one or two vital points can and must be mentioned here.

It is not by any means an agreed matter among competent authorities that Paul's death should be set as late even as the year 64. After describing, in the famous passage to which we shall return presently, the martyrdoms of Peter and Paul, Clement goes on in his next chapter to tell how 'to these there was gathered a great multitude of the elect, who suffered many and dire torments and set us the noblest of examples'. It certainly looks as if Clement were here referring to the Neronian persecution of A.D. 64 as something that happened after the deaths of Peter and Paul. (So e.g. Moffatt, I. N. T., p. 417.) This would, indeed, as Moffatt says, clinch the matter.

But apart from any such consideration, even supposing that Paul did live on for several years after the 'two years' of un-

1 Chronologie der altchristlichen Litteratur, 1897, i, p. 240 n.
2 See the very learned and thorough article by C. H. Turner in Hastings, D. B., for a strong criticism of Harnack's dates.
hindered preaching and teaching in the hired lodging at Rome (Acts xxviii. 30), it would not by any means follow that he must have been released, still less that he must have gone on to Spain or back to the Aegean. We are aware of no valid objection to the view, that the actual sequel to the ἀκολούθως with which Acts closes, was a period of closer confinement, in which the Apostle was no longer allowed the same freedom to preach, but had to be content with the thought that others were doing so, and that the Word at any rate was still ‘not bound’. While holding that this was in all probability the actual course of events for a short period, at the end of which Paul met his death, we see no reason for setting any narrow or rigid limit to this final period of real imprisonment. Whether the term of Paul’s life after the close of Acts was long or short, it is easier to understand our lack of information about it, if he was immured in some Roman prison cell, than on the assumption that he was at large, travelling to and fro, revisiting old churches, founding new ones, introducing new methods of Church organization, engaging in new controversies, and adding fresh and important chapters to the story of his apostolic labours—chapters that, by a cruel fate, were never written down with pen and ink, or if so written were forthwith lost beyond recall.

Then there is the fact, which Harnack himself admits is at least ‘worth mentioning’, that in his Farewell to the Ephesian elders at Miletus (Acts xx. 25, 38), Paul is reported to have said, ‘I know that ye all . . . shall behold my face no more’. The usual conservative explanation of this passage is that Paul’s foreboding was not bound to be realized. But in that case, it seems strange that the author of Acts, writing after the event, should have failed to convey the least hint that Paul’s forecast, and the sorrow and tears which it caused, had a happier sequel than he anticipated at the time. Zahn sees this difficulty, but sees also a way of escape. οὐκέτι, he assures us, does not imply ‘never again’, but only ‘not for a while’. It does not exclude the possibility that a time may yet come when the Apostle will resume his intercourse with the churches of Asia (Einl. i, p. 448). But surely the passionate grief of Paul’s friends, and the way in which the whole pathos of the story is centred in this hard word, forbid any such softening interpretation.
B. Next we have the statement by Clement of Rome that Paul, having taught the whole world righteousness, came to the τέρμα τῆς δύσεως and having borne witness (μαρτυρήσας) before the rulers, so found his release from this world, and departed to the holy place (v. 5-7). This phrase τὸ τέρμα τῆς δύσεως is translated ‘boundary of the West’, or of the Western world, as regarded from the point of view of a Roman, i.e. Spain. But while τέρματα in the plural might conceivably bear this unusual meaning, the natural, proper, and usual meaning of this word is rather the starting-point or winning-post of a race, or the end of a journey, especially the race of life.¹ And that this is the meaning here is rendered all the more likely by the fact that the whole context is full of the figure of the apostolic athlete running his great race for the immortal prize in the stadium of the world. Note the ἀθλητάς v. 1, ἠθλησαν v. 2, βραβεῖον v. 5, κήρυξ v. 6, κλέος v. 6, δρόμον ... γέρας vi. 2, and finally the ἐν γάρ τῷ αὐτῷ ἐσμὲν σκάμματι, καὶ δὲ αὐτὸς ἦμων ἀγών ἐπίκεισθαι vii. 1. Now the goal of this race was certainly not Spain, but Rome, from whatever point in the world-stadium one happened to be regarding it. τῆς δύσεως is a defining Genitive, Western goal, or, goal in the West as opposed to its starting-point in the East. There is no need to understand αὐτοῦ, though we think with Schmiedel (E. B. 4600) and others that it would have been perfectly good Greek to omit it here. Nor was there any need to add τοῦ δρόμου, nor any other explanatory words, which would have made an awkward double Genitive. The meaning is clear enough without any such addition.

If the phrase and its general context favour this interpretation, the immediate continuation of the sentence seems to demand it. For in spite of anything that can be urged to the contrary,² it plainly suggests that Paul reached his final goal, bore his martyr-witness, and so (ὁδωροῦ) found his release from this world, all at


² Zahn, Einl. i. 452.
the same place. The evident parallel between the two martyrdoms, Peter's (v. 4 οὖτω μαρτυρήσας ἐπορεύθη εἰς τὸν τόπον . . .), and now Paul's (v. 7 καὶ μαρτυρήσας . . . οὖτος . . . καὶ ἐπορεύθη εἰς τὸν τόπον . . .) forbids us to make this second μαρτυρήσας refer to witness borne by the Apostle before some tribunal or other in Spain. There is not the shadow of a hint that between the ἐλθὼν and the μαρτυρήσας, or between that and the ἀπηλλάγη, there lay a whole long and important period of missionary journeyings East and West, fresh perils and escapes, new developments of doctrine and of polity, &c.

No ancient writer interprets Clement in the manner required by the modern conservative argument, nor quotes him in support of the release in general, or of the Spanish journey in particular.

So, as Bartlet says,¹ 'Clement goes over bodily to the other side'.

Failing Clement, far more weight than it will carry is now thrown on the corrupt passage in the Muratorian fragment, with its reference in crabbed Latin to 'a departure of Paul from the City, when he departed for Spain'. This in turn is based, according to Zahn (Einl. i, p. 452), on the legendary Gnostic Acts of Peter (A.D. c. 160–170). Nor is the origin of this Gnostic legend itself far to seek. In Romans xv. 24, 28 Paul had written of his intention to go on from Rome to Spain. For the type of mind with which we have here to do, nothing more was needed in the way of materials. The mythopoeic imagination could be trusted to do the rest.

This does not exclude the possibility that others may have found their way, independently of heretical inventions, from the same starting-point to the same conclusion. Take, for instance, the remark of Athanasius that Paul 'did not shrink from going to Rome, nor from proceeding to Spain'² or the similar expression in Cyril of Jerusalem.³ From either of these sentences it would be a very short step to the belief that the Apostle had actually done that which he aspired to do, or did not shrink from doing, especially as it is in each case coupled with an aspiration which was undoubtedly realized.

C. One thing at least is absolutely certain—neither Clement

nor the Fragmentist nor any other ancient writer has a word to say about any eastern journey of the Apostle subsequent to his 'first' Roman imprisonment. Yet apart from such a journey neither a Spanish journey nor a second imprisonment avail in the least to provide room for these Personalia, let alone the whole three epistles. The sole evidence for that eastern journey consists in an inference drawn by Harnack, Zahn, and their followers from the two premises (a) that the Personalia in 2 Tim. and Titus are genuine, and (b) that Paul cannot have written them at any one moment in his earlier life. Apart from that inference it is safe to say that the whole theory of a release, eastern journey, and second imprisonment would not for very long remain standing on the other two feet of Harnack's tripod, the arguments from (1) chronology and (2) Clement's τέρμα τῆς δύσεως and the Fragmentist's Spanish visit.

But granting these premises (a) and (b), does any such conclusion really follow? On what grounds are we obliged to suppose that these disjointed sentences were all written at the same time or from the same place? Why should they not have been written indeed by Paul, but at different times? This is the alternative possibility to which Holtzmann and Harnack and Zahn, with their respective followers, hardly seem to have given adequate attention. And it is precisely this omission which vitiates alike the pure-fiction theory and the second imprisonment theory, and with this, incidentally, the whole modern case for the 'authenticity' of the Pastorals.

For it is just here, so the great majority of 'liberal' critics believe, that the true solution of our problem is to be found. Several brief personal notes addressed by the Apostle at various times to one or another of his friends, are preserved by them, and are still in existence half a century or so after his death. These are eventually copied out from the scattered scraps of papyrus on to a single sheet, either by our author himself or by some other scribe, and so incorporated at the end of his first two epistles. They would, presumably, come into his hands without explanatory notes or headings of any kind to show the actual circumstances of their birth. How was he to discover, what has escaped the notice of devout readers for eighteen centuries, including many scholars ancient and modern? It would have needed a method of study quite foreign
to the early second century, to have deduced from a minute comparison of the internal evidence with the data provided by Acts and the other Paulines, that we have here references not to any one situation, but to several, at intervals varying from a few weeks to some years.

We have now reached the very crux of our argument, in so far as the Pauline authorship of these epistles can be said to stand or fall with the success or otherwise of the attempt to find a place for them within the lifetime of the Apostle. And we shall find that this 'argumentum Achilleum... chronologicum', as Ginella called it (1865, p. 109) does indeed lay bare a vulnerable heel to the shafts of criticism.

We shall see (pp. 115 ff.) that for every personal reference in the paragraphs with which we have just been dealing, there is at least one moment in Paul's life as known to us from Acts and the other Paulines, which fits it like a glove. Some of these items simply corroborate what we knew already. Others add to our knowledge some extremely interesting detail which no ingenuity could ever have deduced from our other sources, but which, now that we have it, harmonizes admirably with all the rest of our information.

Yet on the second imprisonment theory in either of its forms all this is mere coincidence—a somewhat lengthy and complicated string of accidents, but nothing more. Not one of these notes, it seems, refers to the occasion which suits it so perfectly; but they one and all refer really to similar occasions which recurred during this alleged extension of Paul's life—for all of which they are in turn the principal evidence, and, for a large and crucial part of it, the only evidence. That is to say, the judgement that they cannot be fitted into Paul's earlier life is the only positive ground for asserting that Paul ever visited Nicopolis, Corinth, Troas, Miletus, or the shores of the Aegean, after he had once reached Rome. But that judgement is now shown to be erroneous. They can be fitted into the earlier life, provided only that we give up the vain and needless attempt to force them all into the same situation.

That being so, what becomes of the inference drawn from this erroneous judgement? As an inference it falls to the ground.

But it may still be maintained as an independent hypothesis!
We do not know, say its advocates, that Paul died at the end of the first Roman imprisonment.¹ The onus of proof rests, they claim, on those who deny his release. This denial is itself 'mere hypothesis' (so Zahn, *Einl. N. T.* i. 439). In the absence of positive proof that Paul did not, subsequently to his arrival in Rome, visit Macedonia, Corinth, Troas, Miletus, Crete, and Nicopolis, who shall forbid us to assume that he did, and so provide a new framework into which all these Personalia can then be fitted without further difficulty? Given these extra pages, blank pages, at the end of Paul's life-story, why not write on them the required journeys, labours, and incidents?

But before taking this step, let us at least see clearly what follows. In that case history must have repeated itself with a vengeance!

1. On this new eastern journey also, Erastus remains for some reason at Corinth. Once again Paul visits Troas with Timothy and Trophimus as his companions. Once more he leaves Troas if not alone and on foot in summer, at least again in circumstances which make it natural for him to leave his heavy cloak and other impedimenta behind. Only now we must suppose that months, instead of weeks, elapse before he claims them again. Once more they touch at Miletus.

2. Coming to more recent memories, in this imprisonment, as in the first, mischief has been made by Jews from Asia, led apparently by the same Jew from Asia. Alexander has been nursing his old grudge year in, year out, and not content with having used his influence with his fellow Jews at Ephesus and at Jerusalem to Paul’s detriment, has dogged his steps to Rome, and has been successful in pulling the strings not only of Jewish but of Roman justice, in the imperial city itself, and before the supreme tribunal. Not only Ananias, but Nero has lent an ear to this Jewish coppersmith, and become the tool of his spite.

A second time Paul has had as his recent prison-companions Luke, Mark, Tychicus, Timothy, and Demas. Once again he has sent Tychicus to Ephesus. Mark, whose arrival the Colossians are told to expect, Col. iv. 10, and who has already dis-

¹ 'It is true that the Pastoral Epistles imply a period of activity in Paul's life of which we have no other evidence: but neither is there any evidence against it, our ignorance being here complete.' Hort, *Jud. Christianity*, p. 130 f.
appeared from Paul's company in Phil., is now recalled apparently from the same neighbourhood. And the epithet ἐνχριστός which Paul applied in that first imprisonment to another renegade who had lived down his defection (Philem. 11), is now applied in this second imprisonment to Mark, not, as we think, shortly afterwards while the phrase (with its somewhat subtle association of ideas) was still fresh in his mind, but from three to five years later. Timothy who was to be sent away at the end of the first imprisonment, now near the end of the second, is again at a distance, and just as Paul had then intended that Timothy should soon return with comforting tidings (Phil. ii. 18), so now we find him recalled to the Apostle's side. Luke 'the beloved physician' (Col. iv. 14) is still faithful to the last.

Nor is the parallel confined to the outward circumstances of the Apostle. It extends to the very changes in his frame of mind, his alternating moods of buoyant hopefulness and dark forebodings (not for himself, but for the loyalty of his friends). The feeling of loneliness and isolation expressed in Phil. ii. 20 f., and the lack of any mention of the names of companions as still with him, has its counterpart here in the statements 'only Luke is with me', 'Demas has forsaken me', &c. Once again Paul exults that while he is bound, the Word of God runs free. Once again, as the end draws near, Paul is conscious of a change for the worse in his situation; his once numerous band of comrades dwindles, and only one or two can be utterly trusted. The rest, those whom he has not sent away on missions, show signs of uneasiness and concern for their own safety, Phil. ii. 23, 2 Tim. iv. 9.

In Phil. ii. 17 he sees his own life being poured out as a libation on the altar of sacrifice—either1 as a sequel so certain, or a hypothesis so 'vividly before his eyes' as to seem a present fact, or else2 as a process actually begun in the 'drain of vitality' resulting from the privations of his long imprisonment and the drawn out strain of suspense.—In either case it suggests a process whose final consummation is still in the future, and (should all go well, as it may, at his trial) in the indefinite future. He is 'not yet' made perfect, 'not yet' within reach of the prize (οὐχ ὅτι ἤδη ἐλαβον, ἦ ἤδη τετελείωμαι, iii. 12).

But now he says ἤδη σπένδομαι, and this time it is clear that

1 Lightfoot, ad loc.  2 C. H. Dodd in a letter to the present writer.
in his mind the process is as good as finished. The last drops of that red wine are being spilled. In the continuing metaphors we have one perfect tense after another. This really is the end. The die is cast. No 'hypothesis', but grim, glorious certainty. The issue no longer hangs in the balance. The long expected opportunity of opportunities has come,—is at the door (ἐφέστηκεν, cf. the ἐπίσταται αἰφνίδιος in 1 Thess. v. 3). Then he was longing for the time to come when he should receive the summons to weigh anchor, and put out to sea on that last voyage, when he should see his Pilot face to face, Phil. i. 23 την ἐπιθυμίαν ἔχων εἰς τὸ ἀναλῦσαι καὶ σῶν Χριστῶ εἶναι. Now the call has come, the anchor is weighed, and the moment of his departure has arrived—ὁ καίρος τῆς ἀναλύσεως μοῦ ἐφέστηκεν. Then he was still running his unfinished race for the prize, with eyes set on the mark (Phil. iii. 11 ff., iv. 1), now the race is over, and all that remains is for an Umpire more just than Caesar to confer the crown of victory. In Col. i. 5 he had spoken of the hope stored up (ἀποκειμένη) in heaven, and now he knows that the reward of faithfulness is indeed stored up for him (ἀπόκειται).

Now assuming that all this was really written by Paul shortly after he wrote Philippians, nothing would be more natural than this repetition of the figures which had then been foremost in his mind—with just the very difference which we find, that what was there a future possibility is now a present or accomplished fact. But on the second imprisonment theory we have to believe that Paul kept firmly fixed in his mind this whole series of figures, some of them very rare (we might say, unique), for several years on end, crowded years, of intense activity and of marked development both in outlook and vocabulary, and that his last word at the end of this second captivity was just a repetition of the same sentiments in the same words as he had used in his letter to the Philippians at the end of the first. It does not seem very likely. As Bacon says: 'To the martyr also there sometimes comes an unexpected reprieve. Years after he may utter a second time his last farewells. But that which, under such circumstances, he will not do, is to return to his former leave-taking, and, with no reference to having used the figure before, borrow thence the phraseology for his parting legacy' (N. T. I., p. 134).
Some conservatives have inclined in recent years to minimize this impression of a close resemblance between the two captivities. According to Spitta (1893, p. 106), 'the two imprisonments are in fact as unlike to one another as the epistle to the Philippians and 2 Timothy, and as like as one imprisonment generally is to another'. We confess our total inability to square this verdict with the facts just pointed out. The truth is rather that Paul's second Roman imprisonment, if he ever had a second, must have been in an astounding number of details an exact duplicate of the first.

This was recognized even by orthodox scholars in days when the admission was not known to be so dangerous as it is to the traditional opinion. 'How remarkable it is', exclaims good Paul Anton in the year 1727, commenting on 2 Tim. ii. 9, 'that when Paul was brought to Rome for the first time... he was chained, but the Gospel was not chained (Acts xxviii. 16-31) ... in this second imprisonment also, when he is again bound, ... he could again say here the same thing.' It is indeed remarkable! And the resemblance goes, as we have seen, far beyond anything that he pointed out. One, two, half a dozen points of contact between the two imprisonments we might have accepted without a word. But as the number of them increases, the odds against the recurrence of them all increase also in something more than a geometrical progression. The total number of these points of contact is between thirty and forty. It is in fact hardly less than the entire series. It may be too much to say that such a thing is impossible. But it is, to say the least, wildly improbable.

But even so, does it save us? On the contrary, this last desperate expedient proves on examination to be no way of escape from all our difficulties. It only leads us into yet further entanglements. 'Only Luke' is with the Apostle, yet 'Eubulus, Linus, Pudens, Claudia, and all the brethren' send greetings. Paul is already being offered, and the time of his departure has arrived. Nothing remains for him but the crown of righteousness. Yet, with the light of that great Hereafter on his face, and its glory already dawning on his soul, he stops to pen a message to Timothy somewhere in the heart of Asia Minor, bidding him first make careful arrangements for the preservation of the genuine apostolic teaching from generation to generation. He
is to appoint as officers charged with this duty, faithful men who shall be capable of teaching others also (i. 2); he must take care that these are themselves thoroughly grounded in the Truth, warning them against certain doctrinal errors which will spread after Paul is gone, and preparing them to recognize and resist these when the time comes. After he has done all this, Timothy is to set off on his journey to Rome, pick up Mark, presumably at Colossae (Col. iv. 10), call at Troas for cloak, &c., and make haste to bring them all along before the winter.

If we are to take that noble and impressive farewell seriously, he must have known that it was a physical impossibility for Timothy to carry out these commissions until too late. And if we are to take the commissions seriously, they compel us to suppose that in that farewell Paul exercised a mental reservation which would rob it of half its impressiveness and pathos. Paul could perfectly well have written both—Farewell (2 Tim. iv. 5 ff.) and twofold Summons (iv. 9, 21)—but not at the same time, nor as parts of the same letter.

Not even with the help of a second imprisonment, then,—not even if we assume, without a shred of evidence, that Paul returned from Rome to the Aegean,—do we get rid of the inner contradictions between one personal detail and another in 2 Timothy. Those contradictions are inherent in the supposition that these details were originally all of a piece and belong to one set of circumstances. But this supposition is vital to the second imprisonment theory.

That theory therefore, it would seem, must fall to the ground; and the possibility that Paul might have written every word of the Personalia, at different times and places, though not at any one time or place, is the heel of that Achilles.

3. The Five Genuine Notes, their Several Dates, Birthplaces, and Occasions.¹

(i) Titus iii. 12–15. Paul writes from Western Macedonia, several months after 2 Cor. x–xiii, and before 2 Cor. i–ix, bidding Titus, who is at Corinth, be ready to join him in Epirus.

When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, give diligence to come unto me to Nicopolis: for there I have determined to winter. Set forward Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them. And let our people also learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful.

All that are with me salute thee. Salute them that love us in faith. Grace be with you all.

Some months before Paul left Ephesus for the last time, he explained to the Corinthians\(^1\) his intention to pay them an extended visit, and possibly spend the winter among them, after first passing through Macedonia. Apparently they were expecting him to take Corinth first, on his way to Macedonia, and then again on his way to Jerusalem. But, gladly as he would have given them the double 'benefit' (2 Cor. i. 15), that plan would involve, in the first instance, a hasty visit (ἐν παράδεισῳ), which, at the present critical juncture (ἀρπί), he was anxious to avoid. Meanwhile Timothy might be coming, with others, and if so, they must not let any one 'despise' him. Paul had done his utmost to persuade Apollos to join this company; but Apollos declined. He would come, however, on the next convenient opportunity. It was soon made only too clear that the disaffection at Corinth was even more serious than Paul had realized. Certain persons had taken full advantage of their opportunities, while his back was turned, to disparage his work and undermine his influence. Much against his will, and to the detriment of urgent claims at Ephesus, he was forced to pay a flying visit to Corinth,\(^2\) only to find that he might as well have spared himself the trouble. The time was too short, and the mischief had gone too far. His enemies had not struck without first making sure of support. Remarks like those quoted in 2 Cor. x. 10 left him nothing to say, and nothing to do but withdraw. Deeply humiliated, and in great distress of mind, he returned to Ephesus, and wrote the letter mentioned in 2 Cor. ii. 4, 9, vii. 8. With the severity of injured love, it vindicated his good faith and authority. There are strong reasons for believing, with Moffatt (I. N. T., pp. 116 ff.) and many others, that this 'intermediate letter' is preserved in the last four chapters of our 2 Cor.

\(^1\) 1 Cor. xvi. 6-12.
\(^2\) 2 Cor. xii. 14, xiii. 1 f. (τρίτον τόυτο) ... ὃς παρὼν τὸ δεύτερον.
jubilant assurance of his restored confidence (vii. 16) could hardly have been followed, in one and the same letter, by such expressions of profound mistrust as we find, e.g., in xii. 20 f. It was now the turn of Titus to try whether he could succeed, where Timothy and Paul himself had failed. Soon afterwards Paul left Ephesus. For the reason stated in 2 Cor. ii. 1, he took the long northern route, resolved to enter Corinth for the third time, as soon as he could do so happily,—i.e., on hearing from Titus of the success of his efforts,—but not before (μὴ πάλιν ἐν λύπη). He had some hope of finding Titus at Troas (2 Cor. ii. 12 f.); but this zealous friend had not yet had time to carry out his difficult task; so he missed that conditional appointment. Restless and distraught, Paul could not stay to take the opportunities opening up at Troas, but pushed on into Macedonia. There too he found no relief, but afflictions on every side, fightings without and forebodings within (vii. 5). This period of suspense must have lasted longer than is sometimes realized. For (a) in 2 Cor. ix. 2 Paul has boasted that Achaia had been ready with its collection 'for a year past' (ἀπὸ πέρυοι). Achaia was certainly not ready when he wrote 1 Cor. xvi. 1 f. (b) He left Ephesus about Pentecost (1 Cor. xvi. 8), and reached Jerusalem about Pentecost in the following year (Acts xx. 16). That voyage took some seven weeks,¹ and was preceded by the three months in Greece (Acts xx. 3), during which he arrived at Corinth, finished the collection, and wrote his Epistle to the Romans (xv. 25 f.), and the note to Ephesus (Rom. xvi).² Allowing a month for the journey into Macedonia, we are left with at least six months during which his activities are summarized in Acts xx. 2. He made his way right across Macedonia, presumably by the Via Egnatia, pressing on that collection for the poor at Jerusalem, and proclaiming his gospel of divine comfort and immortal hope. At Dyrrachium we picture him looking out over the Adriatic towards where, beyond the western horizon, Rome beckoned. It was now only a step to Illyricum. Thus was realized his dream of 2 Cor. x. 15. While that faith, or fidelity, which had

¹ Ramsay, Paul the Traveller, pp. 289 ff.
² With greetings to Prisca and Aquila and the Church at their house, 3 ff. Cf. 1 Cor. xvi. 19, and note (v) pp. 127, 134. On Rom. xvi. see Moffatt, I. N. T. p. 136.
waned, was waxing again, he did in fact sow the good seed on
virgin soil in 'regions beyond'. That he did not then simply
retrace his steps, is already suggested by the κύκλος (Rom. xv. 19);
and this is confirmed, on our view, by the note before us, written
about this time. How Titus kept this appointment, and was able
to bring such good news as made up for many things, we read
in 2 Cor. i–ix, written, perhaps at Nicopolis, under the great
reaction of joy which followed his coming. We now learn that
Apollos had found his convenient opportunity, and was at Corinth,
on his way to some destination which we have no means of
defining more closely. If now, notwithstanding the κέκρικα
(Titus iii. 12), Paul did after all spend part at least of that winter
at Corinth, he would not this time be accused of having changed
his mind too 'lightly' (2 Cor. i. 17).

The diction of this note coincides with that of 1 Cor. xvi at
too many points to leave room for doubt that it must have been
written after no great interval. οὖν, πέμψω, πρόσ σε, (ὑμᾶς), ἡ,
ἐλθεῖν πρὸς με, παραχειμάσαι, Ἀπολλών, πρόπεμψον, ἵνα, μή,
ἀσπάζονται σε (ὑμᾶς), . . . οἷς. πάντες, ἀπασχολοῦσα τοὺς
φίλους (φίλε), ἡ χάρις μετὰ πάντων ὑμῶν together make a series which
can hardly be dismissed as merely accidental. See further, for
ἐκεῖ Rom. xvi. 24, κέκρικα 1 Cor. vii. 37; v. 3, ii. 2, σπουδάσων
2 Cor. viii. 16 f. (σπουδήν . . . σπουδαίστερος of Titus), ἀναγκαῖος
1 Cor. xii. 22, 2 Cor. ix. 5, χρείας 1 Cor. xii. 1, &c., Rom. xii.
13, ἀκαπνός 1 Cor. xiv. 14.

(ii) 2 Tim. iv. 13–15, 20, 21a, Paul writes from Macedonia,
after the visit to Troas mentioned in 2 Cor. ii. 12 f., bidding
Timothy, who has returned to Ephesus, join him before winter.

The cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus, bring when thou comest,
and the books, especially the parchments. Alexander, the coppersmith
did me much evil: the Lord will render to him according to his works:
of whom be thou ware also; for he greatly withstanded our words. . . .

Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus I left at Miletus sick. Do
thy diligence to come before winter.

Shortly before Paul left Ephesus, he sent Timothy and Erastus
into Macedonia (Acts xix. 22). Erastus must have gone on to
Corinth, where Paul found him, on his own arrival from Nicopolis,
holding a civic appointment such as fell to few Christians in those days, but not forgetful of his old friends at Ephesus (Rom. xvi. 23).

In Acts xix. 23 ff., we read how Demetrius the silversmith gathered together the members of his own and allied guilds of metal-workers, and organized a protest against the interference with 'our trade'. At this meeting Alexander is put forward by the Jews to explain that he and his friends have no sort of connexion with these Christians—quite the reverse! (ἀπολογεῖσθαι)—but is shouted down by the angry crowd, to whom Jews and Christians were all one. This incident was not likely to diminish the hostility of Alexander and his party towards Paul and his friends, and they seem to have lost no time in making further trouble. Paul now in a few words informs Timothy of what happened in his absence, and warns him against this dangerous man, who is sure to take any chance that offers of proving his zeal at the expense of any friend of Paul.

Not that Alexander would have confessed to any feeling so personal as a grudge. With the cold inhumanity of his kind, he would have protested that his action was dictated solely by 'principle', and was not directed against Paul and Timothy as men, but against their pernicious teaching (verse 15 λίαν γερ ἀντέστη τοῖς ἡμετέροις λόγοις). Any suffering inflicted on the misguided individuals who were responsible for that teaching was of course not his fault. He only did his duty. Paul understands this perfectly. Was not he too once self-betrayed by the same sophistry? But he has learned to believe in a Justice which will not be deterred, by any protestations of lofty motive, from visiting on evil deeds their appropriate punishment. To that unerring justice he leaves this typical bigot, and meanwhile bids Timothy be on his guard.

The only occasion on which Paul is actually recorded to have been at Miletus, was on the journey to Jerusalem. If it were necessary on that account to assume that he had never been there before, and that it was then that Trophimus fell ill, then verse 20, 21a must have been written at Patara, where Paul changed ships (Acts xxi. 1), and his last port of call on the Asiatic mainland. This would leave just time for Trophimus to recover and join the Apostle before, or soon after, his arrival in Jerusalem Acts xxi. 29).
For Luke tells us that Paul spent seven days at Tyre, one at Ptolemais, and several (πλείον) at Caesarea, not to mention the seven days at Jerusalem, during which, at the latest, Trophimus must have arrived. This fragment, 20, 21a, would thus stand alone, unless verses 12, 13 belonged to the same note. After the seven days at Troas (Acts xx. 4 ff.), Luke and others go round by sea, while Paul crosses by road to join them at Assos. Timothy, like Trophimus, was of the party that sailed to Troas; but he is not named after this in Acts. Erastus stayed at Corinth, as Timothy must have known. It is possible, though not quite likely, that Paul forgot to send his cloak &c., in the ship.

But it seems much more probable that he left that heavy winter-garment behind when setting out from Troas about mid-summer, the previous year, and that he sent for it from Northwest Macedon about the same time as his note (1) to Titus, when thoughts of the coming winter were, as we know, in his mind. It is generally assumed that Paul sailed from Ephesus to Troas. But this is not stated in our sources, and is less likely than it seems at first sight. For, a year later, anxious as he was to see his friends at Ephesus once more, he decided (κεκρικει, Acts xx. 16 f.) against putting in there, on the ground that, if he was to reach Jerusalem by Pentecost, he must not waste precious time (χρονοτριπτηςαι). Instead, he sent for the Ephesian elders to meet him at Miletus. This meant for them a journey of about 35 miles each way, by the shortest route, and for him a corresponding delay. It certainly would seem a curious method of saving time, but for a fact which is sometimes overlooked in this connexion. The port of Ephesus was always subject to one great natural drawback, which in the end proved its ruin. The channel between it and the sea was liable to become choked with silt brought down by the river Caýster. In Strabo's time (xiv. 24. p. 641) a breakwater, built in the reign of Attalus II, had aggravated this tendency. The resulting obstruction of traffic must have been almost at its worst when Paul sailed for Syria. For it was only a few years later (A.D. 61–62) that Soranus, the energetic proconsul of Asia, cleared the channel and opened the

1 Ramsay, Paul the Traveller, p. 295. 2 Ramsay, in D. B. i. p. 721 f.
harbour. This explains Paul’s choice of Miletus as the most convenient—or least inconvenient—port for communication with Ephesus from the sea, and makes it highly probable that, on leaving Ephesus, eleven months earlier, he went first to Miletus, taking with him the Ephesian Trophimus. Down to the last moment he was hoping for some messenger (Erastus) to arrive with good news from Corinth. In that case he would gladly have crossed the Aegean forthwith. But it was not to be. In this instance ‘no news’ was ‘bad news’. With a heavy heart he left Trophimus to recover from his illness, and sailed to Troas. In the meanwhile Timothy will have returned to Ephesus. He was again in Paul’s company when 2 Cor. i–ix was written (i. 1), and must therefore have received some message calling him to the Apostle’s side. That message, if we are not mistaken, is now before us. Thus we may reasonably suppose that Paul got his warm cloak before that winter, and that, in writing 2 Cor. i–ix and Rom., he was able to use those very books and parchments which had lain for some few weeks at the house of Carpus. If the brief lines referring to Erastus and Trophimus were added as a postscript, either on the verso, or otherwise distinct from the rest of the note, this would explain their separation from it, and their insertion, with similar fragments, at the end of 2 Timothy.

The following words are shared with Titus iii. 12 ff., 2 Cor. i–ix, and Rom., the nearest epistles in time, if our reconstruction be correct,—σπούδασον ἐλθεῖν (Titus iii. 12), πρὸς χειμῶνος (cf. Titus iii. 12 παραχειμᾶσαι), ἡμέτερος (cf. Titus iii. 14, Rom. xv. 4), μένω, ἀσθενέω, ἐρχόμαι, πολλά, κακά, all passim, τοῖς (ἡμ.) λόγοις cf. Rom. iii. 4, 2 Cor. i. 18, ἐνδείκνυμαι Rom. ii. 15, 2 Cor. viii. 24, λίναν (cf. 2 Cor. xi. 5, xii. 12 ὑπερλίαν) ἀποδώσει κτλ. quoted Rom. ii. 6, φυλάσσω Rom. ix. 19, &c., ἀνθίστημι Rom. ix. 19, &c.

(iii) 2 Tim. iv. 16–18a (?18b). Paul writes from Caesarea, soon after his arrival under escort from Jerusalem:

At my first defence no one took my part, but all forsook me: may it not be laid to their account. But the Lord stood by me, and strengthened me; that through me the message might be fully proclaimed, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out

1 Tacitus, Ann. xvi. 23 'portui Ephesiorum aperiendo curam insumperat'. See Furneaux’s note, ad loc., and Waddington, Fustes des prov. asiat. pp. 134–40, on the date of this proconsulate.
of the mouth of the lion. The Lord will deliver me from every evil work, and will save me unto his heavenly kingdom: (? to whom &c.).

The 'first defence' refers to no Roman prima actio,—this was all still in the future—but simply to the events described in Acts xxii. 1 ff. (ἀκούσατε μου τῆς πρὸς ὑμᾶς νυνὶ ἀπολογίας). Luke's story entirely, if tacitly, bears out Paul's present statement, that of the brethren at Jerusalem none stood up for him on this occasion. At the second defence (xxiii. 1) they apparently had no opportunity of doing so, even if they had wished or dared (xxii. 30). But, as Luke too tells us, the Lord stood by him in this time of peril, and assured him that his work on earth was not yet done. He need have no doubt that he will yet win through to the goal of his race, and the crowning opportunity to preach his gospel, at Rome (xxiii. 11 ἐπιστάτας αὐτὸ ὁ Κύριος εἶπε κτλ.).

Verse 14 f., the reference to Alexander, might possibly belong to this note. For when Paul arrived at Jerusalem he was soon attacked by 'Jews from Asia' (Acts xxii. 27). Even without Paul's help we might perhaps have thought we could guess from what town in Asia this party hailed, and the name and trade of their leader!

If verse 18 belongs to this note, then Acts xxiii. 12 sq., the futile vow of the forty Jews, was a case in point of the sort of 'evil work' through which Paul was brought safely in fulfilment of his destiny. But as the deliverance which he there expects, is to set him 'in the heavenly kingdom', it may be better possibly to include that verse in the letter written more than four years after this, on the eve of his martyrdom. See (v) pp. 126 ff.

Paul may perhaps have written πληρωθῇ here, and in verse 5, as in Rom. viii. 4, not πληροφορηθῇ, which in his epistles bears a different meaning (Rom. iv. 21, xiv. 5, Col. iv. 12).

The language of this note, like the situation, is much nearer to Romans than to any other epistle. We find ἀπολογία 2 Cor. vii. 11, ἀπολογέομαι Rom. ii. 15, ἐγκαταλείπω ix. 29, λογίζομαι iv. 3, 22, παρέστη xvi. 2, ἐνδυναμώ ἓν 20, δι' ἐμοῦ xv. 18, τὸ κήρυγμα xvi. 25, ἰνα πληρωθῇ viii. 4, cf. xv. 19, ἀκούσωσιν x. 14, πάντα τὰ ἔθνη xvi. 26, ἐρύθην xv. 31 (ἰνα ρυεθῶ ἀπὸ τῶν ἀπειθοῦντων ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ . . . Ἰερουσαλήμ), στόμα iii. 14, &c.

(iv) 2 Tim. iv. 9–12, 22b. Timothy is recalled to Rome, c. A. D. 62.
Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me: for Demas forsook me, having loved this present world, and went to Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia. Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee: for he is useful to me for ministering. But Tychicus I sent to Ephesus... Grace be with you.

Timothy has presumably been to Philippi, as promised in Phil. ii. 19, 23, but instead of returning at once, has taken first the opportunity to visit his old home at Lystra. He now learns that his presence in Rome is urgently needed. Of all the little devoted band who were with the Apostle when he wrote Eph.-Col.-Philem., Luke 'the beloved physician' alone remains. The rest are scattered. Demas (Philem. 24, Col. iv. 14) has broken down under the strain of imminent danger, and has gone to Thessalonica, the home of Aristarchus (Acts xx. 4). Mark, we gather, is at some place known to Timothy, through which Timothy would pass on his return journey. He must therefore have been sent thither during the interval between the dispatch of Col.-Philem. and Timothy's own departure from Rome. Now in Col. iv. 10 Paul mentions the fact that the Colossians were at that time already prepared for Mark to arrive in the near future. He confirms this expectation, and bespeaks for the nephew of Barnabas a kindly reception. There is no need then to look any farther for the place at which Timothy was to 'pick up Mark' on his way to Rome. Like Onesimus, Mark has lived down his former defection (Acts xiii. 13, xv. 37 ff.), and having been once ἐχρηστος, is now εὑχρηστος... ἵνα μοι διακονη ἐν τοῖς δεσμοῖς τοῦ εὐαγγελίου (Philem. 11 f.). Titus, of whom we last heard as having been summoned to Nicopolis (Titus iii. 12 f.), has evidently been across the Adriatic to visit Paul, and has now returned to continue his labours on the same coast (cf. p. 117 f.).¹ We know, and so did Timothy (Col. i. 1), that Tychicus was sent to Ephesus (Col. iv. 7, Eph. vi. 21). He is now reminded of this fact in order to complete the enumeration of Paul's recent companions, and so to illustrate the Apostle's loneliness and need for the fellowship and ministrations of the few on whose loyalty to the last he can still rely.

¹ Cf. Tacitus, Ann. ii. 53 'honorem (consulatus) Germanicus inii apud urbem Achaiae Nicopolim, quo venerat per Illyricam oram, viso fratre Druso in Dalmatia agente' (W. J. Woodhouse, s. v. 'Dalmatia' in Enc. Bib.).
There remain only Epaphras, Jesus Justus, and Aristarchus (Philem. 23 f., Col. iv. 10-13) to be accounted for. We have Paul's word for the intense anxiety which the first of these had been feeling as to the welfare of his own converts at Colossae, Laodicea, and Hierapolis, and in view of the complete confidence expressed by the Apostle in all three, it is difficult to believe that they were any of them with him when he wrote Phil. ii. 20 f. There is thus no need for us to fall back on the possible, though hardly probable, identity of Epaphras with the Epaphroditus who was sent to Philippi (ii. 25 f.), nor on the suggestion that the name of Aristarchus may have been omitted by some accident from the end of the present note. As it stands, this note in no way contradicts our previous information, but at various points confirms it, and at others supplements it with new and altogether convincing details.

The diction of this note like the next, but unlike the first three, shows clear and special points of contact with the epistles of the Roman imprisonment. For σπούδασον cf. Eph. iv. 3, for ταχέως Phil. ii. 19 (of Timothy), ἀγαπάω Eph. vi. 6, &c., Col. iii. 12, &c., τ. νῦν αἰώνα Eph. i. 21, ii. 2 (ἐν τ. αἰώνι τούτῳ), ἀναλαμβάνω Eph. vi. 13, 16, μόνος Col. iv. 11, Phil. iv. 15, and especially εὐχρηστός εἰς διακονίαν Phil. 11 ff. (εὐχρηστός ... ἵνα μοι διακονῇ), Col. iv. 17, Eph. iv. 12, and finally the benediction ἡ χάρις μεθ' ὑμῶν = Col. iv. 18.

This message reached Timothy too late. Soon after its dispatch, Paul made his final appearance before the Roman tribunal, and was condemned by an unjust judge to die. On the eve of his martyrdom, or perhaps on the very day, he wrote,—

(v) his noble last letter and farewell to Timothy, in which he assures him of his complete confidence, bids him carry through to the end his task, as he, Paul, has now done; and so breaks to him the news that they two will not meet in this world again. The references to Paul's early sufferings and persecutions 'at Antioch, at Iconium, and at Lystra', recall memories which will have been renewed by Timothy's recent visit to those familiar scenes. Hurrying back, as we may be sure the real Timothy would, on receipt of the summons (iv), and picking up Mark at Colossae, as instructed, he was met at Ephesus by this last message, which cancelled its predecessor, filled his heart with sorrow, and his eyes once more with tears, and gave him that commission,
to the fulfilment of which the rest of his own life was devoted.

Our 2 Tim. consists of this last letter edited and brought up to date by the auctor ad Timotheum, for the benefit of the less heroic Timothys of his own day, with the three earlier notes (ii, iii, and iv) tacked on at the end—perhaps under the genuine impression that they were postscripts to (v)—a mistake for which he, if it was he, need not be blamed, seeing that (1) it has been shared for eighteen centuries by Christian readers, who have seen no incongruity between these Personalia and the situation envisaged in the bulk of the letter, (2) there were no explanatory notes on the documents before him, (3) his mistake, made in good faith, has led at least to the preservation of these priceless relics.

In attempting to reconstruct this Farewell Letter, we are obviously confronted with still greater difficulties, and must proceed with the added caution and reserve which they demand. For our task is no longer, as in the previous notes, confined to the comparatively simple business of separating one genuine fragment from another, and assigning each to its appropriate set of circumstances. The situation here is clear enough. But we have now to disentangle the words and sentences of an original letter from additions and amplifications made by one who had prepared himself for his task by prolonged study of the Apostle's writings. That the letter before us consists of these diverse elements we are convinced, for the reasons already stated. But it would be idle to pretend that we can feel at all points the same confidence, that we do at certain points, of our ability to draw with precision the line between the real Paul and his editor.

We have, for instance, not the slightest hesitation in believing the Onesiphorus paragraph (i. 16-18), and the glorious climax (iv. 6-8), to be as certainly the utterance of Paul himself as anything that has come down to us under his name. And we are equally confident that he never wrote, nor dictated, nor authorized, nor conceived, such a passage as ii. 23—iii. 9 (see Text, Appendix IV). A good deal of chapter i seems to be clearly a cento of phrases culled from the ten Paulines. But we must frankly admit our inability to feel quite the same assurance, when it comes to deciding:
(a) How much, if any, of the introductory greeting i. 1 ff. was written by Paul on this occasion. That he had previously used every word of it, is obvious, especially if we may adopt the marginal reading of W. H. (κυρίον Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ). He calls Timothy his beloved child in 1 Cor. iv. 17, but in Philem. refers to his comrade of so many years as 'the brother'. At this moment of tender parting he might perhaps have reverted to the old affectionate description. We find κατ’ ἐπαγγελίαν Gal. iii. 29 (cf. Acts xiii. 23), but never before in the present sort of connexion.

(b) The reference to Lois and Eunice (i. 5) might easily have been derived from contemporary traditions. Yet the language of this verse is free from phrases which could be traced to our genuine Paulines (unless we except χαράς πληρωθῶ, cf. Phil. ii. 2 πληρώσῃ μοι τ. χαράν). The only non-Pauline words are μάμμη, which presents no difficulty, and ἐπιθυμησία (elsewhere in the N. T. only in 2 Peter, twice). We have omitted the verse mainly because we can find no satisfactory way of connecting it with the certainly genuine paragraphs.

(c) Other verses which come near the border-line are ii. 1, iv. 2b.

PAUL'S LAST LETTER

The Lord grant mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus: for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain; but, when he was in Rome, he sought me diligently, and found me (the Lord grant unto him to find mercy of the Lord in that day); and in how many things he ministered at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

But thou didst follow my teaching, conduct, purpose, faith, long-suffering, love, patience, persecutions, sufferings; what things befell me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured: and out of them all the Lord delivered me.

I charge thee in the sight of God, and of Christ Jesus, who shall judge the quick and the dead, and by his appearing and his kingdom; preach the word; be instant in season, out of season...

Do the work of an evangelist, fulfil thy ministry.

For I am already being offered, and the time of my departure is come. I have fought the good fight, I have finished the course, I have kept the faith: henceforth there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give to me at that day: and
not only to me, but also to all them that have loved his appearing . . . to whom be the glory for ever and ever. Amen.

Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the house of Onesiphorus . . . Eubulus saluteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren. The Lord Jesus be with thy spirit.

Written at Rome c. A. D. 62, on the eve of Paul's martyrdom, to meet Timothy at Ephesus on his way back from Lystra.

The letter falls into four parts:

I. Onesiphorus and his labour of love, i. 16–18.

II. Timothy's own comradeship over a longer period. Divine protection in past perils, iii. 10 f.

III. A last charge laid on Timothy to carry on the great work, and finish his task, as Paul has finished his, iv. 1, 2a, 5b.

IV. The sure reward of faithful service, iv. 6–8. Doxology, last greetings, and benediction, iv. 18b, 19, 21b, 22a.

I.

The letter begins with a grateful reference to services rendered, in Timothy's absence, by a friend from Ephesus, who had made it his business to seek out the prisoner of Tigellinus (Tac. Ann. xv. 51. 5)—not the easiest task in the world, nor the safest—and had found him in that closer confinement, to which he must have been transferred during or before his trial, from the hired lodging of Acts xxviii. 30.

There is a great story behind Paul's brief but suggestive record of that search through Rome. We seem to catch glimpses of one purposeful face in a drifting crowd, and follow with quickening interest this stranger from far coasts of the Aegean, as he threads the maze of unfamiliar streets, knocking at many doors, following up every clue, warned of the risks he is taking but not to be turned from his quest; till in some obscure prison-house a known voice greets him, and he discovers Paul chained to a Roman soldier.

Having once found the way, Onesiphorus is not content with
a single visit, but true to his name, proves unwearied in his ministrations. Others have flinched from the menace and ignominy of that chain; but this visitor counts it the supreme privilege of his life to share with such a criminal the reproach of the Cross. One series of turnings in the vast labyrinth he comes to know as if it were his own Ephesus.

We can partly divine what these visits must have meant to one whose bodily powers, spent and broken by much privation, were in urgent need of such material comforts as Onesiphorus would not fail to bring. Still more as tokens of that love which 'never faileth', must they have refreshed a spirit jaded by suspense, disappointed and saddened by recent experience of cynical injustice and of craven disloyalty.

For in those days his Roman citizenship had proved to be a worthless thing, and Roman justice a mockery. Once, when he was on his trial at Jerusalem, leading members of the Church there had not lifted a finger to help him. He had borne them no grudge for that.  

Now members of the Church at Rome, where he lay in graver peril, had been active in making of the very gospel a tool to injure his case. In that he had contrived to find reason for rejoicing. But that was not all, nor the worst. Some on whom he had thought he could rely to the uttermost, had failed him in these last critical days. Alarmed by ominous signs of coming storm, they had fled to a safe distance, proving only too conclusively that in their minds, after all, their own interests came first, and 'the things of Jesus Christ' second. So Paul was left almost if not quite alone. For he had felt it right to send some others, besides Timothy, on errands of vital importance, setting the requirements of the kingdom, as ever, before his own necessities (e.g. Mark, Col. iv. 11, and Epaphroditus, Phil. ii. 25). Lonely and tired and ill, he would not have been human if these desertions had not cut him to the quick. Yet of all this he now says not a word, but only speaks with passionate gratitude of the relief brought by this faithful friend.

But Onesiphorus has paid his last visit. Paul does not say what has become of him. For others' sakes, as well as his own, the prisoner must be careful what he writes. Some things must

1 p. 120 f.  
2 Phil. i. 16, 18.  
3 2 Tim. iv. 10; Phil. ii. 20 f., p. 123.
always be left for a trusty messenger to tell by word of mouth.¹ That he had taken many and great risks for Paul, and for the work of Christ, is certain. He who so risks his life, has given it, whether or not he receive it again. The impression conveyed to most readers is that Onesiphorus had ventured into this dangerous quarter once too often, and paid, or was likely to pay, the penalty with his life.

Paul’s prayer for him is that in the Hereafter he may be repaid in his own coin by One, whose promise stands, ‘Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy’. As he had persevered till he found Paul in this dark cell, so in that bright Day when he reaches the goal of his life’s quest, may he find a still truer Friend, and better welcome, awaiting him There. Meanwhile in one household at Ephesus they will be needing that same mercy to comfort them, when they hear the news that will accompany this letter. He prays that they may find it; and sends them such an account of those last weeks at Rome, as would at least mingle a just pride with their sorrow. So he discharges this debt of gratitude as best he can—pays an immortal tribute to the memory of his friend, rescues his name from oblivion, and links it for ever with his own, as one of those who held not their lives of any account, so that they might accomplish the ministry which they received from the Lord Jesus (Acts xx. 24).

That Onesiphorus should have proved himself worthy of such a tribute would be no surprise to those who had known the man long and well enough to recognize his real character. It was like him, they would say, recalling one instance after another of his thoughtful self-effacing ministry. There was one time in particular, five to seven years earlier, when he and Paul and Timothy were all in Ephesus together. Doubtless Timothy had every reason to realize then, and to remember now, how well this true disciple had learned the lesson taught in those ‘words of the Lord Jesus’—‘It is more blessed to give than to receive’ (Acts xx. 35).

A comparison of this passage with that in which Paul tells the Philippians (ii. 25 ff.) of similar services rendered, and risks taken, by Epaphroditus, leaves no room for doubt that he who wrote

¹ Col. iv. 7, Eph. vi. 21 f., Phil. ii. 23.
the one, wrote also the other, and after no long interval. Each helps us to understand how it was, that so many were willing to put their lives in jeopardy for his sake.

II.

But Paul was not one to keep all his gratitude for the dead, and forget what he owed to the living friend, whose services and comradeship reached back over a still longer period.

For himself the thought of what is coming has no terrors. For Love and Faith have transfigured Death, and banished Fear. But he realizes none the less what the news of his death must mean to Timothy. With infinite care and delicacy he chooses his words to break the shock of those tidings, and comfort the sad heart of his friend. First he will rob inevitable grief at least of its sting, by meeting beforehand all bitter thoughts of vain regret or needless self-reproach, that Timothy was not in his place by Paul's side at the last. He will set What-has-been to silence What-might-have-been. Then he will show him the brighter side of this sorrow.

Nothing that any one else may have done, and nothing that has happened, or can happen now, will ever be able to eclipse the unwavering devotion of this man after Paul's own heart, this kindred spirit (ἰσόψυχος, Phil. ii. 20), who has followed like his faithful shadow over more miles than either of them could count. Long before ever they set foot in Ephesus as heralds of the Gospel, Timothy had responded with youthful enthusiasm to Paul's invitation, and had left all, to join him on what was then already a perilous mission. He knows, none better, what happened to Paul before that, at Antioch, at Iconium, and at Lystra. No need to write out the much longer list of places where they two together have since then carried their lives in their hands, as they flung in the face of an unbelieving world the eternal challenge of the Cross. Uphill and down, through storm and sunshine, leaving the old home very far behind, they have tramped side by side, learning to know and understand each other, as only they can, who have seen one another in many different lights and changing moods, and under very varied circumstances. In the fierce furnace of tribulation, and in the
crucible of pain, they have proved each the other’s fidelity, and have found it pure gold.

It does not seem too much to say that Timothy must indeed have ‘followed’ Paul’s teaching, alike in its detail and in its large outlines, as no other ever did or ever will. For when Paul was writing his early letters to the Thessalonians, as in his varied correspondence with the Corinthian Church, Timothy was there by his side. When he dictated his masterpiece to the Romans, Timothy was there, while Tertius wrote. More recently in Rome, as he wove the rich many-coloured fabric of those charges to the churches of Asia, or revealed in the note to Philemon more of the real Paul than any but an intimate might see; and last of all, only a little while ago, when he opened his inmost heart to those loyal friends at Philippi, Timothy was there—not as an absolutely silent and impassive bystander, but venturing perhaps now and then to offer a suggestion. In each of these, except the circular which we know as Ephesians, he is named either as a trusted colleague⁴ or as joint-sender along with Paul; and this can hardly have been a mere idle compliment.

He knew therefore the actual circumstances under which each of these immortal letters was written. He could recall the very look, tone, and gesture with which many of those thoughts were first uttered, that have changed so many lives. There would be other letters too, doubtless, known to Timothy, but lost to us (e.g. to the Laodiceans, Col. iv. 16).

He has had unique opportunities of following not only the written, but also the spoken words of the Apostle—sermons on great occasions, discourses in school and synagogue, fierce debates, conversations in street or market or upperroom—personal applications of one divine remedy to the infinite variety of human need.

Meanwhile his youth has hardened into manhood, and the disciple (or Chela, as they might say in India), has become the honoured and trusted comrade, and the ‘son’, ‘the brother’ (Philem. 1, cf. 1 Cor. iv. 17). Sharing the vision of a Kingdom, they have shared also the travail which makes that Kingdom come. They have learned to be silent together without embarrassment, or speak without reserve, as men may, who

---

⁴ 1 Cor. iv. 17, xvi. 10 f., Rom. xvi. 21.
have passed through deep waters together. And this old fisher
of men might have repeated what that other old fisherman, in
Theocritus, says to his mate, as they lie in their hut by the sea,
wakeful through the long, dark hour before dawn:

\[\delta σ καὶ τάν ἀγραν τῶνερατα πάντα μερίζει.\]

So it has come to pass that Timothy has been initiated into
the inner secrets of Paul's mind, has marked the drift of his
great arguments and the connexion between diverse elements
in his teaching—has entered into his aims and ideals, his hopes
and fears, his dreams and disappointments, and shared with him
the ventures of that faith which stakes all on the present power,
and final victory, of 'things not seen'. He has come very near
to the great heart of Paul, has caught the glow of its passion,
felt the throb of its desire, and marvelled at the inexhaustible
reserves of its calm fortitude.

He knows too, as hardly another, what it has all cost—
amid what difficulties, in what sheer physical weakness, weari-
ness, and pain, and in the teeth of what relentless opposition,
open and underhand, Paul has carried out his life-purpose through
the years. It was a hunted man, with a price set on his head,
as well as a sick man, tortured and hampered by some incurable
complaint, who built up that mighty edifice, to withstand the
shocks of time, and become one of the permanent factors shaping
the thoughts and moulding the destinies of men. Yes, Timothy
knows, though he cannot understand, the hatred which has dogged
the steps of his friend—by what awful vows men with pious phrases
on their lips have bound themselves to kill him—and by how very
little they have failed. But one thing more he knows, that hitherto
the Unseen Deliverer has brought him safely through all.

Therefore he has the right to share Paul's confidence that
in this direst assault of evil powers the same Divine Helper will
stand by him to the end. Not that Paul has any illusions, or is
blind to the desperate nature, humanly speaking, of his present
situation. When he wrote to the Philippians, there still seemed
quite a good hope of his being set free to revisit his churches,
and continue his work on earth. But now that is all over, and
there is not the remotest chance of his escaping alive from the

---

hands of his enemies. From Caesar's verdict there is in this world no further appeal.

Yet even so he is safe! Through this most perilous pass the Lord will be his Helper; and the same Hand which long ago rescued him from 'wild beasts at Ephesus', and from 'the lion's mouth' at Jerusalem, will bring him unharmed through the very jaws of death, and set him in the heavenly kingdom. And now in this sublime confidence, which finds its climax in the doxology, iv. 18,—

III.

The Apostle lays on Timothy the last solemn charge, in the witnessing presence of mighty Invisible Powers, binding him to his duty by vows more strait than ever Arthur laid upon his knights. Come what may, he is to herald the Word. Let his message ring out inevitable as the Day of Judgement, and his preaching catch from his theme some of its tremendous urgency. Keep close at the appointed task (ἐπιστήμη), as one whose Task-master is close at hand (ἐφέστηκεν, cf. 1 Thess. v. 2 f. ἐπιστημαται). This he must do, not waiting for the convenient season, like some excellent persons and brilliant preachers (1 Cor. xvi. 12 ὅταν εὐκαιρίας), but sowing the good seed in all weathers and beside all waters. 'In season', yes, watching always for the best opportunity, missing no heaven-sent chance, buying up the right moment, though it cost all he has. But also, 'out of season'—daring the apparently hopeless venture, holding on when all seems lost, preaching to deaf ears, knocking still at fast-bolted doors, finding in opposition and peril only an added incentive to go forward (1 Cor. xvi. 8 f.). Timothy is to do the work, not of an ecclesiastic (honourable and necessary as later experience may prove such service to be), but of an evangelist. His to take up the torch and wave it; to carry the light of a great Hope into the dark places of sorrow, sin, and despair; and so labouring, to fill up his cup of human service.

IV.

For Paul's own cup is full to the brim, nay, is already being poured out (see p. 112 f.). At last he has received the summons so

1 p. 121 f. In any case, Paul was of this mind to the last.
long and eagerly awaited. For him the midnight is past. He stands watching the day break. His hour of destiny has come. The anchor is weighed, the vessel ready. A wind from heaven is filling her sails. And the voyager is ready too. It is high time for him to put out to sea. There will be no shipwreck this time!

So in Paul's spirit broods the deep content of one who has played his part like a man in the great game of life. He has run his race. He has kept the faith, not like some zealous custodian of traditions received, at second-hand, from a mightier Past, but as a pioneer guards the gate of a land he helped to discover; as a seeker stands for the Truth revealed to his eyes by no mortal's showing, but by a light from heaven.

All that remains for him now is to go and receive the victor's crown, laid up in store for him in some safe treasure-house of the great Unseen. This a Judge more just than Caesar will give him on that Day whose promised coming is the refrain of Paul's triumph-song. But not Paul only—there would be no joy for him in any reward, which he could not look forward to sharing with others—all who have loved the Lord's appearing, shall have their part in the glory of that marvellous dawn.

That is all. There is indeed nothing more to be said. A last greeting to Paul's chief friends at Ephesus, Prisca and Aquila, who risked their lives for him long ago (Rom. xvi. 3 f.), and would do it again, if occasion offered; and the family of Onesiphorus. Then greetings to Timothy from four members of the Roman Church by name, and from the brethren generally. The letter closes with the simple benediction.

Of this last message Bengel's golden phrase tells the whole truth, and nothing but the truth:

'Testamentum Pauli et cygnea cantio est haec epistula'.

To these five notes the oracular remark of Erasmus may be applied, without a trace of that irony which seems to lurk in the words, as often as they are quoted with reference to these epistles as a whole:

'Non est cuiusvis Paulinum effingere pectus.'

1 'This letter is Paul's testament and swan-song.'
2 'Not every one can feign the heart of Paul.'
There is a saying attributed to Averrhoes, the Arab philosopher:

‘Bonum est cribrare modium sabuli ut quis inveniat unam margaritam’. ¹

It has been necessary for us to sift many bushels of the dryest sand that ever drifted—collecting Particles, Prepositions, *Hapax Legomena*, passing these through index after index as through a sieve—calculating percentages, poring over diagrams, and striving to wrest from arid pages of statistics their lost secret. Now at the end, if our argument holds, we find not one pearl only, but a cluster of five, and see them restored, each to its own place on the shining thread of Paul’s life-story.

¹ ‘It is good to sift a measure of sand, and find one pearl.’—E. C. Gardner, *Dante’s Ten Heavens*, p. 3.
EPILOGUE

It only remains to indicate very briefly some of the more important results for New Testament study and Church History which would follow, in the event of the conclusions drawn in this essay being confirmed by the verdict of scholarship.

1. In the first place, the non-Pauline elements would no longer form the basis of what would in that case be recognized as mistaken conceptions of the personal development of the Apostle, and of the general development of the Church during his lifetime. But these elements would remain as an important factor in the materials for a historic reconstruction of actual developments in Christian ideals, doctrine, and polity during the reigns of Trajan and Hadrian.

2. Our reasons for regarding the other ten epistles as genuine would be strongly reinforced (a) by the external evidence of this new witness who, in the early years of the second century knew, revered, and quoted, all or most of them, as the very words of Paul, (b) by the internal evidence of our statistical tables and other linguistic tests in which they are seen to form so consistently a close series.

3. The genuine notes would gain a new and greatly enhanced value and interest by being thus restored to their true context and historical setting in the actual life of the Apostle.

4. Our conception of that life would be shorn of the old legend of a release and second Roman imprisonment, with all the network of mistaken inferences which have for so many years derived from it their plausibility.

5. But for the rest, the historicity of the heroic figure and personality of Paul, as delineated in the Acts and in the genuine epistles, would receive new and striking confirmation.
APPENDIX I

A. Words found in the Pastorals, but not in the ten Paulines. 306 (including repetitions 437).

+ A postolic Fathers only.
* In Apostolic Fathers and also in Apologists.
× In Apologists only.
• In neither.

c Only in quotations from the LXX.

The figure after a word indicates the number of times it occurs. Where there is no figure, the word occurs only once.

A i. 'Pastoral Ἴδραμα Δεμεν.' Not elsewhere in the N. T., 175 (incl. reps. 220).

(i) ΠΕΙΣΤΟΤΗ only, 75 (incl. reps. 86).

+ 11 ἄγνεία 2, βλαβέρος, δίλογος, δίωκτης, ἐπεροδιασκαλέω 2, ματαιολογία, δομολογομένως, πραΰταβία, πρόσκλησις, τεκνογονέω, ὑπερπλεονάζω.
* 8 ἀλλως, ἀνεπήλπυτος 3, ἀπέραντος, ἀπόδεκτος 2, ἐλαττων (adv.), ἐντενεῖς 2, θεοσέβεια, φιλαργυρία.
× 19 αἰδώς, ὁμοίης, ἀνδροφόνος, ἀποδοχὴ 2, ἀπρόσιτος, διαστροφή, ἕκγονος, ἐντρέφομαι, ἐπιφρός, ἡμερισμός, καταλέγομαι, κόσμως 2, μεταλήμψις, μονόμας, νοσε, ἐρετός, ὑπόνοια, ψευδολόγος.
• 37 ἀδιπλότης, ἀνδραποδιστής, ἀνήθεσις, ἀντίλυτος, ἀπόβλητος, ἀποθη-σαιρίζω, αὐθεντέω, βαθύς, γραώδης, γνωσία, διαπαρατριβή, ἐδραίωμα, ἐκκύτης, ἐπερκέως, εἰςμετάδοτος, καταστολή, κατα-στρυκνία, κανοστριάξομαι, κοινωνικός, λογομαχία, μυταλάρης, νεόφυτος, εξενοχέω, οἰκοδεσποτέω, πατραλής, περιτείρω, πλέγμα, πορισμός 2, πρόκριμα, σκέπασμα, στόμαχος, τεκνογονία, τεκνο-τροφέω, υδροτοτέω, ψυλλοφονέω, φλιάρος, ψευδωνύμοις.


(ii) ΠΕΙΣΤΟΤΗ only, 48 (incl. reps. 50).

+ 11 ἀγωγή, ἀναζωπυρέω, ἀνάλυσις, ἀνανήφω, ἀναφέχω, ἀπαίδευτος, δειλία, ἐπισωρεύω, καταστροφή, νεωτερικός, χαλκέως.
APPENDIX I

* 9 ἀθλέω 2, βέλτιον, γόης, ἐνδύω, καταφθείρομαι, μηδέποτε, πιστόομαι, πραγματία, χρήσιμος.
* 7 ἀκρατής, ἀνεξίκακος, ἀνήμερος, ἀποτρέπομαι, φίλαντος, φιλόδονος, φιλόθεος.
* 21 ἀκαίρως, ἀνεπαίσχυντος, ἀντιδιαθήματι, ἄρτιος, ἀσπονδος, ἀφιλάγαθος, γάγγραινα, γνωαίρων, έξηδος, ἔλεγχος, ἔπανορθωσις, θεοπνευστος, κνήθωμα, λογομαχέω, μάμιη, μεμβράνα, ὁρθοτομεῖ, στρατολογεῖ, συνκακταπέθε 2, σωφρονισμός, φελόνης.

(iii) Titus only, 30 (incl. reps. 30).
+ 6 βδελυκτός, ἐγκρατής, κατάστημα, περιουσίος σ, στυγνός, φιλότεκνος.
* 6 άφυδής, ἐκατέρπομαι, ἄργιλος, πρεσβύτης, σωτήριος, φροντίζω.
* 3 Ιουδαίος, σωφρονίζω, σωφρόνω.
* 15 αἰρητικός, ἀκατάγνωστος, αὐτοκατάκριτος, ἀφθορία, ἐπιδιορθῶν, ἐπιστομίζω, ἱεροπρεπής, καλοδιάσκαλος, ματαιολόγος, νομικός adj., οἰκουργός, περιφρονεῖ, φιλάγαθος, φιλανδρος, φρεναπάτης.

(iv) 1 and 2 Timothy, 9 (incl. reps. 1 Tim. 11, 2 Tim. 10).
+ 2 ἄστοχέω 3, παρακαταθήκη 3.
* 1 ἁνόσος 2.
× 2 πρόγονος 2, τυφόομαι 3.
* 4 διδακτικός 2, κενοφωνία 2, νομίμως 2, ἱπτοτύπωσις 2.

(v) 1 Timothy and Titus, 10 (incl. reps. 1 Tim. 12, Tit. 12).
* 4 διαβεβαιόμαι 2, διάγω 2, σεμνότης 3, σώφρων 4.
× 1 πλήκτης 2.
* 5 αὐχροκερδῆς 2, ἀμαχος 2, γενεαλογία 2, νηφάλιος 3, πάροινος 2.

(vi) 2 Timothy and Titus, 1 (incl. reps. 2 Tim. 1, Tit. 1).
+ 1 εὐσεβῶς 2.
[P also × ἀνατρέπω 2 Tim. ii. 18, Titus i. 11 (Jo. ii. 15 W. H., not W. H.\(m\) v. S.), cf. A 2 (vi).]

(vii) 1 and 2 Timothy and Titus, 2 (incl. reps. 1 Tim. 3, 2 Tim. 2, Tit. 2).
+ 1 διάβολος adj. 3.
* 1 ὁφέλιμος 4.

A 2. In the Pastorals and other N. T. books, not in the ten Pauline Epistles. 131 (incl. reps. 217).

(i) 1 Timothy only, 52 (incl. reps. 61).
+ II ἀφιλάργυρος, βραδύως, βοβίλω, γυμνάζω, μαργαρίτης, περιποιέομαι, πολυτελῆς, πρεσβυτέρων, πρόδηλος 2, σπαταλάω, σωματικός.
APPENDIX I

* 28 ἀμελέω, ἀντιλαμβάνομαι, ἀπόλαυσις, ἀποτελανόω, ἄστιλος, δίπλοος, εἰσφέρω, ἐκφέρω, ἐμπίπτω 3, ἐπακολουθεῖ 2, ἐπιλαμβάνομαι 2, ἐπισκοπή, ἐπίσταμαι, ἐπιτίθημι, εὐεργεσία, ἥπτιχος, ὑθήκω, ἵματισμός, κτίμα, λωδορία, μελετάω, νεοτής, παραδέχομαι, περιέργος, προϊόν 2, προσέρχομαι, συφροσύνη 2, ὑβρίζω.
× 7 δυνάστης, ἐπιμελέομαι, εὐσεβέω, ζωογονέω, ὁρέγομαι 2, προσμένω 2, ὑστερος.
× 6 ἀγαθοεργεῖ, ἔξηκοντα, νίπτω, νομοδιάσκαλος, περιέρχομαι, πυκνός.

(ii) 2 Timothy only, 33 (incl. reps. 34).
+ 7 ἀργύρεος, ἐμπλέκω, κακοπαθεῖ 2, νομή, προδότης, προπετής, ὑπόμνησις.
× 17 ἄνοια, βρέφος, δρόμος, κριτής, λέων, λιαν, μάχομαι, μέντα, μεταλαμβάνω, μίστοτε, σοφίζω, στερέος, στεφανῶ, οἰκίζω, χαλέπισ, χειμών.
× 7 ἀχαρίστος, γεωργός, ἐπιτιμᾶω, ζωγρέω, κακούργος, ξύλινος, στρατιώτης.
× 2 ἔξαρτίζομαι, ἐνκαίρω.

(iii) Titus only, 15 (incl. reps. 17).
+ 4 αὐθάδης, ἐπισφαίρω 2, νοσφίζομαι, παλινγενεσία.
× 10 ἀνωφελὴς, ἥδανη, θηρίων, κοσμικός, λείπω 2, λυτρόμαι, μιαίω, πειθαρχεῖ, ἵγης, φιλανθρωπία.
× 1 νομικός (subs.).

(iv) 1 and 2 Timothy, 8 (incl. reps. 1 Tim. 12, 2 Tim. 8).
* 6 βίος 2, βλάσφημος 2, ἐκτρέπω 4, κῦρῳ 2, παρακολουθεῖ 2, χεῖρων 2.
× 1 βέβηλος 4.
× 1 ἐπίθεσις 2.

(v) 1 Timothy and Titus, 10 (incl. reps. 1 Tim. 20, Tit. 11).
+ 1 φιλόζενος 2.
× 7 ἄργος 3, κοσμέω 2, μαρτυρία 2, νεώτερος 5, ὄσιος 2, προσβύτερος 5 προσέχω 5.
× 1 κατηγορία 2.
× 1 ἀνυπότακτος 3.

(vi) 2 Timothy and Titus, 6 (incl. reps. 2 Tim. 8, Tit. 6).
* 4 αἰτία 3, ἀπολείπω 3, ποικίλος 2, ὑπομμηνήσκω 2.
× 1 ἀνατέταλε 2.
× 1 περιστημή 2.
(vii) 1 and 2 Timothy and Titus, 7 (incl. reps. 1 Tim. 18, 2 Tim. 11, Tit. 11).

* 5 ἀρνεόμαι 7, δεσπότης 4, εὐσέβεια 10, μῆθος 4, παρατέομαι 4.
× 1 ζήτησις 3.
• 1 γυναῖω 8.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>1 Tim.</th>
<th></th>
<th>2 Tim.</th>
<th></th>
<th>Titus.</th>
<th></th>
<th>Total.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>+</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>×</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>×</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>•</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>96</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>173</td>
<td>114</td>
<td>81</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Words found in one Pauline Epistle.

(i) Romans, 261 (including repetitions, 336).

B 1. Also in the Pastoral, but in no other N. T. book. 10 (incl. reps. 10).
+ 3 ἀδιάλειτος, ἀλαξῶν, ἀνακαίνωσις.
× 2 πλάσσω, ὑποτίθημι.
• 5 ἀστοργος, μόρφωσις, ὄδύνη, σωρεύω c, ὑβριστής.

B 2. In the Pastoral, and elsewhere in the N. T. 23 (incl. reps. 37).
+ 2 ἔπαισχύνομαι 2, παγίς c.
× 20 ἀπείθης, ἀπιστεύω, ἀπιστία 4, ἀπωθέομαι 2 c, ἀσέβεια 2, ἀσεβίς 2, ἐκεῖ 2;
 ἡμέτερος, καθαρός, καθιστημι 2, κοινός 2, ὄρολογος 2, [? X ὄνειδιζω, 1 Tim. iv. 10 W. H.m, v. S., not W. H., cf. c 2], ἐπί 4, τάχος, ἵππωναν, φέρω, ψεύστης. ἀντιλέγω c, ἀποστρέφω c, ἐκχέω c.
• 1 ὄνειδισμός c.

C 1. Not in the Pastoral, nor elsewhere in the N. T. 103 (incl. reps. 127).
+ 12 ἀνοχή 2, ἐπαναμιμνήσκω, ἱλαρότης, καυρότης 2, κατάλαλος, προδίδωμι c, προηγέομαι, σκληρότης, συνδοξάζω, συντέμνω c, χρηματισμός, ψεύσμα.
APPENDIX I

* 14 ἀφικνέομαι, ἀχρέομαι c, ἐκκαίομαι, ἐκπετάννυμι c, ἐπικαλύπτω c, κακοήθεια, κατασκάπτω c, νότος c, πλάσμα, προγύμνω, προέχομαι, σύμβουλος c, ὑπολείπομαι c, χρήσις 2.

* 24 ἀναλογία, ἀναπολόγητος 2, ἀνθραξ c, ἀποστητεύει, ἀσπίς c, γραπτός, δολίως c, ἐπονομάζομαι, ἐπικαλοχίλιος c, ἤτοι, θεότης, θεοστηγής, καθοράω, λάρυγγες c, νομοθεσία, δρεῖς, παράκειμαι 2, προπάτωρ, σεβάζομαι, συναγωνίζομαι, σύντριμμα c, σύνψημα, ὑπέρφορεω, ὑπολήμμα c.

* 53 ἀγρίελαιος 2, ἀλάλης, ἀμαντόσης, ἀνελάμβανος, ἀνέξαρτης, ἀνόμοις 2, ἀντιπρατεύομαι, ἀποτολμάω, ἀποτομεῖα 2, ἀρά c, ἀσθενήμα, ἀσύνθετος, δικαιοκρασία, δικαίωσις 2, ἔγγανερον, ἑκατονταετής, ἑκ-κλάομαι 3, ἑκκεντρικός 6, ἑπιστολή, ἑφευρέτης, θήρα c, ἱεροσυλέω, ἱερογλυφον, καλλιέλαιος c, κατάκριμα 3, κάτωνικες c, λίμαι, ματαιόμαι, μεταλάβεος 2, οἰκείρως c, παλαιότης, πάρεξες, πιστῆς, προαιτώμαι, πρόσληψις, προστάτες, σύμφωνος, συναναπαύομαι, συνήδομαι, συνκάμπτω c, συνμαρτυρεῖον 3, συντρακαλέομαι, συντανείς, συνυπόδεις, τολμηροτέρως, ὑπανέρος, ὑπερεντυχάνων, ὑπερνικάω, ὑπόδοκος, φιλόστοργος, φρόνημα 4, χρηστολογία, ψυχραιμία.


+ 13 ἀντιτάσσομαι, ἀπέναντι c, ἀσχημοσύνη, γνωστός, δόμημα, ἐπανατάσσο-μαι, ἐπιπίπτω c, καθήκων, πταίω, στεναγμός, φιλοξενία. Twice—κοιτή, σκοτίζομαι.

* 81 ἄβυσσος c, ἀδίως, αἰνέω c, ἀκακός, ἀκροατής, ἄμμος c, ἀνάγω, ἀνταπόδομα c, ἀριθμὸς c, ἀφαιρέω c, βούλημα, γέμω c, δεδομένος c, διαπορεύομαι, διαταγή, διάφορος, ἐκθέτω c, ἐκτίνωσαι c, ἐλάσσων c (adj.), ἐμπιπληθύνω, ἐπίσημος, ἐπιστυγχάω, ἐπιπέφυω, ἐρπετόν, ἤπω c, θεάμαι, ἰός c, κατάγω, κατανοῶ, καταράμω, κατηγορεῖ, κεραμεύς, κύκλω, λειτουργεύω, λόγιον, μέρισμα, μεταξύ, μήπω, οἰκήτης, οἰκουμένη c, ὄμοιμαδῶν, ὄμοιος c, ὄριον, πέρας c, πεπένων, πηλός, πιτράσκω, πού, πρόβατον c, πρόδυνος, πρόοιμος, προφητικός, σκληρόν, συντελέω c, συντρίβω, σφαγή c, ταλαιπωρία c, ταλαίπωρος, τάφος c, τράχυλος, τυφλός, φονεύω c, φόνος, ὀραίος c, ὀσέλ. Twice—ἀδύνατος, ἀτιμάζω, ἀκλίνω, λατρεία, μεστός, μοιχεύω, προγνώσκω, προσκόπτω, ύψιλός. 3 times—ἀσύνετος, ἐντυγχάνων, νικάω. 5 times—ἀπεθάνω, δικαίωμα, κλάδος.

* 24 ἀνταποκρίνομαι, ἀποβολή, ἐγκαλεῖ, ἐμφανίσις c, ζέω, λάχανον, λογικὸς, μήτρα, ὀδηγός, ὀνείδειμος c, δεξίς c, παιδεύτης, ποιητής, συναγχηματίζομαι, τετράπους, ὑπνος, φάσκω, χρηματίζω, ὤδελα. Twice—ἐλαία, μοιχαλίς, φόρος, φυσικός. 4 times—συγγενής.

* 7 ἀναξίω, ἐνδικος, ὀλαστήριον, μόλις, ὄφελημα, συναντιλαμβάνομαι, κατακαυχάομαι 2.
(ii) 1 Corinthians, 266 (incl. reps. 415).

B. I. 7 (incl. reps. 9).
+ 1 ἀρσενοκοίτης.
× 4 ἄθανασία 2, ἱερός, συμβασιλεύω, ὑπεροχή.
× 1 ἐκκαθαίρω.
* 1 ἀλοάω 2 (1 c).

B. II. 22 (incl. reps. 51).
* 20 ἀποστερέω 3, βοῦς 2 (1 c), γαμέω 9, διαμόνιον 4, δείκνυμι, ἔτα 3, ἐπιτρέπω 2, ἐσχάτος 5, μάταιος 2, μιμήσκομαι, μωρός 4, νομίζω 2, παραγίνομαι, παρατίθημι, τυχάνω 3, ὑποφέρω, φεύγω 2, φιλέω, χήρα, χρυσίον.
* 2 παραχεμάζω, φιμώ 2.

C. I. 98 (incl. reps. 127).
+ 19 ἀκώ, ἀνδρίζομαι, ἀπελεύθερος, ἐκτρωμα, ἐνέργημα 2, ἐντροπή 2, θηρωμαχέω, λαμά 3, κατακάλυπτομαι 3, καταστρώνυμαι, μαρῶν-ἀθα, μωρία 5, παρεδρέω, πάροδος, περίψημα, συνζητήτης, τάγμα, πετυχον, χρυστεύομαι.
× 15 ἀνάθεως, ἀψυχος, διάσπεσις 3, ἐγκρατεύομαι 2, ἐξαίρω 2, ἐπιθυμητής, ἐπιστάμομαι, ἐρμηνεία 2, ἰθος, μέθυσος 2, δομίλια, παιξίς 2, σύμφορος 2, σύμφωνος, συνγνώμη.
× 20 ἀγαμος 4, ἀγενής, ἀντίληψις, ἀπόδεσις, ἀσχημονεύω 2, αὐλός, διόπερ 2, δουλαγωγέω, δράστομαι 2, δυσφημεῖν, ἐκνήφω, ἐφοτάζω, καλάμη, καταχράομαι 2, κόμη, λύσις, μήτεγε, πτυγία, πυκτεύω, φρήν 2.
* 44 ἀδάπανος, ἀδήλως, ἀνίγγαμα, ἀκατακύπτος 2, ἀμετάκλητος, ἀναξίως, ἀπερούστατος, ἀρχιτέκτων, ἀστατέω, ἀσχήμων, ἀτομος, βρόχως, γεώργιον, γυμνητεύω (?), διερμηνεύτησις, εἰδώλιον, ἐνκοπή, ἐπιθυματία, ἐπεραγγελως 3, εὐπάρεδρος, εὔσωμος, εὐχρημοσύνη, ἤχεω, ἱερόντυν, κομαίω 2, κυβέρνησις, κύμβαλον, λογία 2, λοίδορος 2, μάκελυν, νηπιαζω, νοθηρεύτης, οἰδήφως, παραμυθία, πιθός, περικάθαρμα, περιπεριομαι, ρυτή, συμμερίζομαι, οὐπικίως, ὑπέρακμος, χοίκος 3, ὑπερειρεί.

C. II. 139 (incl. reps. 228).
+ 19 ἀγνωσία, ἀμέρμιος, ἀργύριον, δειπνέω, ἐκπειράζω, κατάχειμαι, κινδυνεύω, κόκκος, κυριάκός; κυριακός, περιάγω, πνευματικός, συγκεράννυμι, σχολάζω. Twice—βιωτικός, κλάω, ποίμνη. 3 times—ἀγοράζω. 10 times—ἀνακρίνω.
× 78 ἀδηλος, ἀκολουθεῖω, ἀκρασία, ἀμπέλων, ἀπάγω, ἀποφέρω, ἄριστος 2, δή, διαφορέω, δώδεκα, ἐώς, εἰκοσι, εἰσακουσά, ἐνοχος, ἐπάνω, ἐπιβάλλω, ἐπίκειμαι, ἒχθος, καίω, κατακαίω, κιβάρα, κτήνος, λοιδορέω, μηνύω, μοιχός, οὐαί, οὐδεπότε, οἴφελος, παιδίων, παιναχού, παράγω, πάσχα, πεντακόσιον, πέντε, περιπληθύμη, πλειστός, ποιμαίνω, πόλεμος, πόμα,
APPENDIX I

προσκυνέω, ἵλιος, στήλη, σίτος, στάδιος, συμβαίνω, συνάγω, συνετός c, τίμωσ, τούπιν, τύπτω, ὑπηρέτης, χαλκός, χυλιάς. Twice—άνα, ανάμνησις, ἀτιμος, ἄφωνος, γάλα, δείπνον, ἐκδέχομαι, θύο, κείρω, μέλει, μυρίος, πορνεύω, πώρη, συνήθεια. 3 times—ἀρπαξ, ἀστήρ, νίκος c, δλως, σχίσμα. 4 times—φυτεύο. 5 times—ἐιδωλολατρος; μετέχω. 7 times—συνέρχομαι. 8 times—σπηρίων. 12 times—προφητεύω.

x 20 ἀλαλάζω, ἀπολούω, γραμματέως, ἐννοομος, ἐγγενής, θάπτω, θεάτρων, ἱερόν, μαίνομαι, παροζόνομοι, πεντηκοστή, τωλέω, χόρτος, ψευδομάρτυς. Twice—ἐξυμος, κέντρον, κρυτήριον, ξυράμαι, ὑσάκις. 4 times—ψυχικός.

• 22 ἀρτομιαν, ἄρρωστος, ατλέομαι, ἐκβασις, ἐλεεινός, ἐνκαιρώ, καταμένο, καθαρίζω, κορέννυμι, κολύμω, περιβόλαιον, σαλπίζω, συνείδον, συνιστάλλω, σήρης, ὑποτάξω. Twice—γαμίζω, γογγύζω, διδακτός, εὐσχήμων. 3 times—ἐξουσιάζω. 4 times—διερμηνεύω.

(iii) 2 CORINTHIANS, 197 (incl. reps. 264).

B 1. 5 (incl. reps. 5).
  + 1 ὀστράκινοι.
  * 1 αὐτάρκεια.
  • 3 ἀποτόμοις, ναυαγεῖο, στρατεία.

B 2. 15 (incl. reps. 20).
  + 1 ἀνάγνωσις.
  * 9 ἀρκεῖο, ἀφίστημι, βαρέομαι 2, διαφθείρω, ἐπαίρω 2, ἐτοιμος 3. βασιλεύς. δει 2, ἔξωθεν.
  × 5 δάκρυ, μάχη, ὄμολογία, πλάνος, συναποθνήσκω.

C 1. 92 (incl. reps. 128).
  + 11 ἄγνωτης 2, ἄγρυπνια 2, βυθός, δόλεος, εἰσδέχομαι c, καταβαρέω, κατά-κριται 2, πέρυσι 2, πτωχεύω, στενοχορέομαι 3, ψυχρισμός.
  * 9 ἀνεκδύηγητος, ἀρμόζομαι, ἐπακούω c, ἥνικα 2, ὕλαρος c, πανούργος, πάντες c, προαιρέομαι, σπουδαῖος 3.
  × 17 ἀμετρος 2, ἀρρητος, αὐθαίρετος 2, ἐκδαπανάμαι, ἐκφοβέω, ἐπιτιμία, ἦδοστα 2, παραπτικά, παραφρονείω, προαιρετάνω 2, προσαναπληρῶ 2, συλαώ, συνκαθάθεσις, συντέρπω 2, φωτισμός 2, ψυχαπόστολος, πεντάκις [πεντακασχίλιοι Ιουσ.].
  • 55 ἀβαρίς, ἀγανάκτησις, ἀδρότις, ἀνακαλύπτω 2, ἀπαρασκευαστος, ἀπει-τον, ἀπόκριμα, αὐγάλζω, δίψος, δολός, δόθες c, δυσφημία, ἑλαφρής, ἐκδημιέω 3, ἐλαστικός c, ἐλαφρία, ἐνθημείω 3, ἐνκρίνω, ἐντερπατέω c, ἐντυπόω, ἐξαπορέομαι 2, ἐπειδύνομαι 2, ἐπιπάθησις 2, ἐπισκηνών, ἑτεροχυσία, ἐφημία, ἑφικνέομαι 2, ἰκανότης, καθαίρεσις 3, κάλυπ-
ma 4, καπηλεύω, καταναρκάω, κατάρτισις, κατοπτρίζομαι, μετοχή, μολυσμός, μομάμαι 2, νυχθήμερον, ὀξύρωμα, προενάρχομαι 2, προκαταρτίζω, προσκόπη, σαργάνη, σκῆνος 2, σκόλιος, συμφώνησις, συναποστέλλω, συνιτυπογράφω, συστατικός, ὑπερβαλλόντως, ὑπερέκκεια, ὑπερεκτείνω, ὑπερλάν 2, φειδομένως, φυσώσις.

C 2. 85 (incl. reps. 111).
+ 14 ὑκώνω, ἐλαφρῶς, ἐπιεικεῖα, θαύμα, καταλαλία, λιθάζω, μέριμνα, παρεκτός, συνοχή, χορηγεῖ. Twice—ἀτενίζω, καλύπτω, πλάξ. 4 times—προθυμία.
+ 49 ἀποτάσσομαι, ἀριστερός, ἀρχαῖος, βαρύς, βοηθεῖν 2, γένιμα, δαπανάω, ἐξίστημι, ἐσωθεῖν, ὡδεῖν, ὰνγάτηρ 2, καθαιρέω, ληστής, λίθος, μέλας, μετανόει, μετρέω, ὄπτασία, πάλαι, παντοκράτωρ, παράδεισος, παρέχω, πληθύνω, πατομός, προέρχωμαι, πρόκειμαι, πρόσκαιρος, στόρος, τεχνών, τεσσαράκοντα, τηλικόντως, ἰβρικός, ὑψόν, χειροτονέω, χήρα, χωρέω. Twice—βουλεύομαι, ἐγνάφομαι, λάμπω, μῆτη, μέρος, νησεῖα, πλατύνω, πληγή, ὑπόστασις, φυλακή. 3 times—ἀφροσύνη, τρίς. 5 times—θαρρέω.
× 14 ἐπιστασίας, ἐρημία, ἐτοιμός, ἡπτάομαι, θυρίς, καταβάλλω, μεταμέλομαι, ὅδυρμος, ὀλικτήριος, περαιρέω, πιάζω, σκορπίζω 2, τυφλός, χαλάω.
• 8 ἀγιότης, ἐσοπτρόν, ἕδωτορία, ἱβαδίζω, συνεκδήμος, ψύχος. Twice—περίσσευμα, πτωχεία.

(iv) Galatians, 85 (incl. reps. 100).

B 1. 0.
B 2. 5 (incl. reps. 6).
+ 1 ἱπόκρισις.
* 3 βιβλίων 2, ζυγός, στῦλος.
+ 1 μεσίτης 2.

C 1. (incl. reps. 35).
+ 5 βασκαίνω, ἱονδαίζω, ἱονδασμός 2, κενόδοξος, μυκτηρίζομαι.
* 6 δάκνω, ἐκκεντάρατος 2, ἱστορεῖ, πεισμονή, φθονέω.
* 4 ἄλληγορεῖ, μορφοῦμαι, πατρικός, προκαλοῦμαι.
• 17 ἐθνικός, ἐκπίπτω, ἐπιδιώκομαι, εὐπροσωπέω, ἱονδαῖκος, κατασκοπέω, ὅρθοποδέω, παρείπτως, προεναγγέλζομαι, προθεσία, προκυρόμαι, προσανατίθημα 2, στίγμα, συνηλικίωτης, συννοιχέου, συνυποκρίνομαι, φρεναπατᾶω.

C 2. 48 (incl. reps. 59).
+ 1 ἐκλύομαι.
* 31 ἀνατίθημαι, ἀνωθεν, ἀποκόπτω, ἀρα, βοῶς 2, διαμένω, ἐγκράτεια,
APPENDIX I

145

ἐκβάλλω, ἐμένω, ἐναυτός, ἐξαιρέω, ἐπιτροπος, εὐθέως, καταγωγώςκω, κρεμάννυμι, μετατίθημι, μήν, ὅμοιος, προστίθημι, ἤγγιμι, στείρος, τίκτω, τριάκοντα, ὑποστρέφω, φαρμακία, φορτίον. Twice—ἐξαποστέλλω, ταράσσω, ὄδίω. 3 times—κατάρα. 5 times—παιδίσκη.

8 ἀναστάτω, δεκατέντε, ἐνυλογέομαι, μεταστρέφω, συνπαραλαμβάνω, τετρακόσιον, ὑποστέλλω. Twice—ἀνέρχομαι.

8 ἀκυρώ, ἔξορύσσω, ὁδε, παρατηρέω, πηλίκος, προείδων, τεκνίον. Twice—πορθέω.

(v) Ephesians 93 (incl. reps. 106).

B 1. r.

1 λουτρών.

B 2. 8 (incl. reps. 10).

* 5 ἀναλαμβάνω, ἀπατάω, διάβολος (subs.) 2, παιδεία, τιμάω.

* 1 ἀσωτία.

* 2 ἄλως, εἰκαγελιστής.

C 1. 40 (incl. reps. 45).

+ 5 ἀνανεώμαι, ἐσωματία, εὔνοια, κληρόμαι, συνικοδομέω.

* 5 ἄθεος, ἄσοφος, ἐκτρέφω, ἐνότης, μέγεθος.

+ 4 βέλος, κατώτερος, πάλη, συνμέτοχος 2.

* 26 αἰσχρότης, ἀνοιξις, ἀπαλγέομαι, ἔλαχιστότερος, ἐξοσχυώ, ἐπιθυμώ, ἐπυφαίνομαι, ἐνθαμπώ, θυρέως, καταρτισμός, κλυδωνιζομαι, κοσμοκράτωρ, κρυφή, κυβία, μακροχρόνιος, μεθοδία, μεσότοιχον, νικολογία, παραργυσμός, πολυπόκελος, προελπίζω, προσκαρτέρησις, φυτίς, συναρμολογώ, συνπλοῦτης, σύνσωμος.

C 2. 44 (incl. reps. 50).

+ 11 ἀπελή, κατωκητήριον, μήκος, ὀσιότης, πάροικος, σατρός, σκοτόμαι, σπίλος, φραγμός, χαρτόν. Twice—πανοπλία.

* 26 ἀγνοια, ἀγρυπνεῖν, αἴχμαλωσία, ἀκρογνωιάος, ἄνεμος, ἄροιν, ἐκτορείμαι, ἐπέρχομαι, ἐργασία, ἐδ, ἐπιστήμη, ἦλικια, καταβολή, κράνη, ὀργίζομαι, ὀσφύς, περιξώνυμι, πλάτος, ποιμή, πολιτεία, σωθῆραν, ὄδωρ, φρόνησις. Twice—μακρᾶν, ὄψις, 3 times—ἀμφότεροι.

* 4 ἀνίμη, πατριά, χειροποίητος. Twice—ὑπεράνω.

* 3 προσκολλάομαι, συνκαθίζω, ὑποδέομαι.

(vi) Philippians 76 (incl. reps. 81).

B 1. 4 (incl. reps. 6).

* 2 κέρδος, σεμνός.

* 2 προκοπή, σπένδωμαι.

2995
B 2. 5 (incl. reps. 5).
+ 1 ἐπίσκοπος.
* 2 ἐπιεικής, ὀπίσω.
× 2 ἐπέχω, σπουδαίως [-οτέρως].

C 1. 37 (incl. reps. 38).
+ 10 ἀγνὸς, ἀκωρέωμαι, ἀναβάλλω, ἐπιτόθητος, εὐφυχέω, λήμψις, μεγάλως, παραπλήσιον, συναθλέω 2, ὑπερψφό.
* 4 ἀυθθενής, κενοδοξία, προσφιλής, σκοπός.
× 5 ἀλυστός, αὐτάρκης, ἐτέρως, μιμέομαι, πολίτευμα.
* 18 ἀπουσία, ἀρπαγμός, γνησίως, ἐξανάστασις, ἐπεκτείνομαι, εὐφημός, ἰσόψυχος, κατατομή, καταχθόνιος, ὁκτάημερος, παραβολεύομαι, παραμύθιον, πτύρομαι, σκάβαλον, συμμορφεύομαι, σύνζυγος, συνμιμητής, σύνψυχος.

C 2. 30 (incl. reps. 32).
+ 5 αἴτημα, ἐξαιτίς, τελείως, ὑστερήσις, χορτάζω.
* 18 ἀρετή, ἀσφαλής, Βίβλος, γογγυσμός, διαστρέφω, εἰλικρινής, ἔντυμος, ἐπιλανθάνομαι, ἵσος, καίσερ, κύνω, ὅμαι, πολιτεύομαι, σκολίος, συνλαμβάνομαι, τατείνωσις. Twice—ζημία, μορφή.
× 3 ἀναλύω, ἀποβαίνω, φωστήρ.
× 4 ἀδημονεῖν, ἀφορμῶ, βεβαιώσις, πραιτώριον.

(vii) Colossians 58 (incl. reps. 60).

B 1. 0.

B 2. 3 (incl. reps. 3).
+ 1 πλούτως.
* 1 κρύπτω.
× 1 ἀπόκειμαι.

C 1. 33 (incl. reps. 34).
+ 2 ἀσχρολογία, προσηλὼν.
* 6 ἀνταπόδοσις, δογματίζομαι, θεότης, νεομηνία, ὅρατος, στερέωμα.
× 5 ἀθυμέω, εὐχαρίστω, πλησιμονή, συλαγωγεῖ, φιλοσοφία.
* 20 ἀνάψων, ἀνταναπληρῶ, ἀπεκδόματο 2, ἀπέκδωσις, ἀπόχρησις, ἀρεσκία, ἀφεδία, βραβεύο, ἐθελοθρησκία, εἰρηνοποιέω, ἐμβατεύω, καταβραβεύω, μετακινεῖ, μομφή, παρηγορία, πιθανολογία, προακούω, προτεύω, σωματικός, χειρόγραφον.

C 2. 22 (incl. reps. 23).
+ 6 γεύομαι, δυναμῶ, παραλογίζομαι, πικραίνω, τελειώτης. Twice—σύνδουλος.
* 10 ἀποκρόνομαι, ἀπόκρυφος, ἐνταλμα, ἐξαλείφω, ἔρτυ, θρησκεία, θρόνος, ἰατρός, κληρος, πόνος.
(viii) 1 Thessalonians 41 (incl. reps. 47).

B 1. 1.
* 1 ἤπιος.

B 2. 7 (incl. reps. 8).
+ 2 νήφω 2, παραγγελία.
* 4 ἀντέχομαι, γαστήρ, ἐνεντίος, ἐφίστημι.
* 1 διαμαρτύρομαι.

C 1. 20 (incl. reps. 23).
+ 1 δλοτελής.
* 5 ἀμέμπτος 3, ἀναμένω, ἀτακτός, θεοδιδακτός, ὅσιος.
* 4 ἐκδιώκω, ὀλιγόψυχος, περιλείπομαι 2, τρόφος.
* 10 ἀπορφανίζω, ἐνορκίζω, ἐξηχέωμαι, κέλευσμα, κολακία, ὁμείρομαι, προ-
    πάσχω, σαίνομαι, συμφυλέτης, ὑπερβαίνω.

C 2. 13 (incl. reps. 15).
+ 1 ἀσφάλεια.
* 9 αἰφνιδίος, ἀληθινός, ἀληθῶς, ἄσυχάςω, κτάομαι, ὀλόκληρος, τοιχαροῦν,
    ὤδιν, εἰσοδος 2.
* 3 ἀπάντησις, ἄρχαγγελος, παραμυθέομαι 2.

(ix) 2 Thessalonians 26 (incl. reps. 31).

B 1. 1.
* 1 ἐπιφάνεια.

B 2. 4 (incl. reps. 6).
* 4 ἄξιόω, ἂπνα, κρίσις, μήτε 3.

C 1. 10 (incl. reps. 12).
+ 4 ἀτάκτως 2, ἐνκαύχομαι, περιεργάζομαι, συμειώμαι.
* 1 τίνω.
* 5 ἀτακτέω, ἐνδεχόμαι, ἐνδοξάζομαι 2, καλοποιέω, ὑπερανέάω.

C 2. 11 (incl. reps. 12).
* 7 ἀναρέω, ἄτοπος, δίκη, καταξιώμαι, μιμέομαι 2, σαλεύω, φλάξ.
* 2 ἀποστασία, σέβασμα.
* 2 ἐπισυναγωγή, θροέομαι.

(x) Philemon 10 (incl. reps. 10).

B 1. 1.
+ 1 εὐχρηστος.

B 2. 1.
* 1 πρεσβύτης.
APPENDIX I

C. 1. 5 (incl. reps. 5).
+ 1 ἐκούσιος (Mar. 1).
* 2 ἀχρηστος, ἀνίματι.
* 2 ἀποτίσω, προσοφείλω.

C. 2. 3 (incl. reps. 3).
* 2 ἀναπέμπω, ἐπιτάσσω.
* 1 ἔσεια.

D.

A. 2. 131 Non-Pauline words shared by the Pastors with the individual books of the N. T.

(Words underlined, and numbers bracketed, in one N. T. book only.)

(i) = 1 Tim. only.  (iv) = 1 and 2 Tim.
(ii) = 2 Tim. only.  (v) = 1 Tim. and Titus.
(iii) = Titus only.  (vi) = 2 Tim. and Titus.
(vii) = 1 and 2 Tim. and Titus.

(1) Matthew. (i) ἀμελέω, δυπλός, εἰσφέρω, ἐμπέπτω, ἐξήκοντα, ἐπιλαμβάνομαι, ἐπιτίθημι, ἡνήσκω, μαργαρίτης, νῖπτω, προάγω, προσέρχομαι, προσμένω, ύβρίζω, ὀστερός: (ii) γεωργός, ἐπιτιμάω, κριτής, λιαν, μήτοτε, στρατιώτης, χαλέπις, χειμών: (iii) νομικός (subs.), παλαινεσσία, ὑγίης: (iv) χείρων: (v) ἄργος, κοσμέω, πρεσβύτερος, προσέχω: (vi) αἰτία, ποικῖλος: (vii) ἄρνεομαι.

34 (3)

(2) Mark. (i) ἀποπλανάω, ἐκφέρω, ἐξήκοντα, ἐπικυανθεῖα, ἐπιλαμβάνομαι, ἐπιστάμαι, ἐπιτίθημι, ἡνήσκω, νέστης, νῖπτω, παραδέχομαι, πολυτελής, προάγω, προσέρχομαι, προσμένω, πυκνός (?): (ii) γεωργός, ἐπιτιμάω, εἰκαίρως, λιαν, μήτοτε, στρατιώτης, χειμών: (iii) θηρίων, ὑγίης: (iv) βίος, [παρακουλουθεῖα], χείρων: (v) πρεσβύτερος, μαρτυρία: (vi) αἰτία, ποικῖλος: (vii) ἄρνεομαι, παρατέρω.

3[4]/32 (2)


24 (9) + 32 (8) Luke and Acts = 56 (17)

(4) John. (i) ἐπιτίθημι, θνήσκω, ἱματισμός, νῖπτω, προσέρχομαι: (ii) γεωργός, μάχομαι, μέντοι, μήτοτε, νομή, στρατιώτης, χειμών: (iii) μιαίνω, ὑγίης: (iv) χείρων: (v) κατηγορία, μαρτυρία, νεότερος, πρεσβύτερος (?): (vi) αἰτία, ἀνατρίτω (?), περιστημία, ὑπομμαθησικῶς: (vii) ἄρνεομαι, ζήτησις.

25 (3)
APPENDIX I

(5) Acts (not Luke). (i) ἀγαθοφερέω, ἐπίσταμαι, ἐνεργεία, εὐσεβεία, μελετάω, παραδέχομαι, περιέχω, περιέρχομαι, προσμένω, σωφροσύνη: (ii) ἁγύρεω, δρόμος, ἐξαρτίζω, μάχομαι, μεταλαμβάνω, προσεύχω, χειμών: (iii) θηρίον, νοσφίζομαι, πειθαρχέω, νύχη, φιλανθρωπία: (iv) βλάσφημος. ἐπίθεσις: (v) ὁσίος: (vi) περιστήμη: (vii) εὐσεβεία, χάρις.

28 (12) + 32 (8) Luke and Acts = 60 (20)


(7) Hebrews. (i) ἀμελεώ, ἀπόλαυσις, ἀφιλάργυρος, γυμναζόμενος, εἰσφέρω, ἐκφέρω, ἐμπίπτω, ἐπιλαμβάνομαι, ἐπισταμαι, ὁργοῦμαι, παραδέχομαι, περιέχω, προάγω, πρόδηλος, προσέχομαι: (ii) κριτής, λέων, μεταλαμβάνω, μήτοτε, στερεός, στεφανός, χρύσος: (iii) ἄνωφερής, θηρίον, κοσμικός, μιαῖον: (iv) βέβηλος, ἐκτρέπομαι, ἐπίθεσις, χείρων: (v) ἀνυπότακτος, ὁσίος, πρεσβύτερος, προσέχω: (vi) αἰτία, ἀπολέιπον, ποικίλος: (vii) ἀρνέομαι, παραιτέομαι.

39 (10)

(8) 1 Peter. (i) ἀστυλος, ἐπακολούθεω [+? Mark], ἐπισκοπή, ἵσυχος, λοιδορία, πολυτελής, προσέχομαι: (ii) βρέφος, λέων, στερεός: (iii) λυτρόμαι: (v) κοιμέω, νεώτερος, πρεσβύτερος, φιλόξενος: (vi) ποικίλος: (vii) δεσπότης.

17 (4)

(9) 2 Peter. (i) ἀστυλος, βραδύνω, γυμναζόμενος: (ii) ἐμπλέκω, σοφίζω, ὑπομνήσεις: (iii) αὐθάδης, ἤδωνη: (iv) βλάσφημος, κύρις, χείρων: (v) ἁγύρω, προσέχω: (vi) υπομονήσκω: (vii) ἀρνέομαι, δεσπότης, εὐσεβεία, μῆθος. [+? καταστροφή, καταφθείρομαι].

18 (7)

(10) James. (i) ἀστυλος, ἐπισταμαι, κτίσμα, ὁπαταλάω: (ii) γεωργός, κακοπαθεώ, κριτής, μάχομαι, μέντοι: (iii) ἤδωνη, θηρίον, λείπω: (v) ἁγύρω, πρεσβύτερος: (vi) ποικίλος.

15 (2)

(11) 1, 2, 3 John. (i) προάγω: (ii) λίαν: (iv) βίος: (v) μαρτυρία, πρεσβύτερος: (vi) υπομονήσκω: (vii) ἀρνέομαι, ἕγαινω.

8

(12) Jude. (i) ἐπισταμαι: (ii) ἐπιτιμώ, μέντοι: (iii) μιαῖον: (vi) ἀπολέιπω, υπομονήσκω: (vii) ἀρνέομαι, δεσπότης.

8

(13) Revelation. (i) διπλός, ἐξήκοντα, ἐπιτίθημι, κτίσμα, μαργαρίτης: (ii) ἁγύρως, λέων, ἐξώλως, χρύσες: (iii) θηρίον: (v) κοιμέω, μαρτυρία, ὁσίος, πρεσβύτερος: (vii) ἀρνέομαι, δεσπότης.

16 (1)
APPENDIX I

E.

(A 1) *Hapax Legomena* and (A 2) other Non-Pauline words shared by the Pastoral with Apostolic Fathers and Apologists. 211.


A 2. 42. (i) ἀπόλαυσις, βουθίζω, ἕκφερω, ἐμπίπτω, ἐπακολουθῶ, ἐπισκοπή, ἐπίσταμαι, εὐφρενία, ἡσύχιος, νεότης, παραδέχομαι, πρόδηλος, προσέρχομαι, σωφροσύνη: (ii) δρόμος, κριτής, λέων, λίαν, μεταλαμβάνω, μήποτε, νομή, προτετής: (iii) αὐθαίρετος, ἐπιφάνεια, θηρίον, λυτρόμαι, παλινγενεσία: (iv) βίος, κήρυξ: (v) ἀργός, κοσμεῖν, ὀσίος, προσβύτερος, προεύχομαι, φιλόζενοι: (vi) αἰτία, ἀπολείπω, ἐπομμανήσκω: (vii) δεσποτής, εὐσέβεια.

(A 2) Clem.: A 1. 7. (i) ἐντευξις, θεοσέβεια, φιλαργυρία: (ii) ἀθλέω, βέλτιον: (iii) ἐγκρατῆς: (iv) ἀστοχεῖα.

A 2. 21. (i) ἀπόλαυσις, ἀστικός, γυμνάζω, παραδέχομαι, προσέρχομαι: (ii) ἄνοια, κακοπαθεῖα, κριτής, μεταλαμβάνω, στεφανῶ: (iii) ἡδονή, κοσμικός, λυτρόμαι: (iv) βίος: (v) ὀσίος, προσβύτερος, προεύχομαι: (vi) αἰτία: (vii) ἀρνέομαι, εὐσέβεια, μῦθος.


A 2. 26. (i) ἀμέλεω, ἐμπίπτω, ἐπακολουθῶ, ἐπισκοπή, μαργαρίτης, μελετῶ, παραδέχομαι, προσβύτερον, προάγω, σωφροσύνη: (ii) δρόμος, λίαν, μήποτε, σοφίζω: (iii) ἀνωφελῆς, ἡδονή, θηρίον, λείπω, λυτρόμαι: (iv) βίος, ἐκτρέπω, χεῖρων: (v) κοσμεῖν, προσβύτερος, προεύχομαι: (vii) ἀρνέομαι.

(4) Polycarp: A 1. 6. (i) ἀγνεία, δίλογος, ματαιολογία, φιλαργυρία: (iii) ἐγκρατῆς: (vii) διάβολος (adj.).

A 2. 14. (i) ἀμέλεω, ἀποπλανάω, ἀφιλάργυρος, εἰσφέρω, ἕκφερω, ἑπακολουθεῖ, λοιπορία, προάγω: (ii) κριτής, χαλεπός: (iii) πειθαρχείω: (v) νεώτερος, προσβύτερος: (vi) ἀπολείπω.

(5) Martyrdom of Polycarp: A 1. 4. (i) ἀνεπίληπτος: (ii) δελία, μηθέπτο: (iii) ἀψευδής.

A 2. 18. (i) ἀντιλαμβάνομαι, βραδύνω, πολυτελής, προάγω, προσέρχομαι: (ii) λέων, στεφανῶ, χαλεπός: (iii) θηρίον, κοσμικός: (iv) βίος, κήρυξ, χείρων: (v) κοσμεῖν, μαρτυρία, προεύχομαι: (vi) τουκίδος: (vii) ἀρνέομαι.
(6) Didache: A i. 3. (i) διώκτης: (iii) ὄργαλος: (iv) ἀστοχεὺς.
A 2. 18. (i) ἀπόλαυσις, ἀφιλάργυρος, εἰσφέρω, ἤσύχιος, ἰματισμός, νέότης, προσέρχομαι, σωματικός: (ii) κριτής, λίαν, μάχομαι, φιλάργυρος, μῆτσετε: (iii) αἰθαδής, κοσμικὸς, λυτρόμαι: (v) ἀργός, προσέχω: (vii) δεσπότης. 21

(7) Barnabas: A i. 4. (i) διώκτης: (ii) ἐνδύναι, ἐπιστευέω, μηδέποτε.
A 2. 24. (i) ἐπίσταμαι, ἐπιτιθημι, ἤσύχιος, ἰματισμός, μελετάω, νέότης, πολυτελῆς, σταταλῶ: (ii) κριτής, μάχομαι, μῆτσετε, νομῆ, σοφίζω, στερεώς, στεφανῶ: (iii) θηρίον, λυτρόμαι: (v) ἀργός, μαρτυρία, νεώτερος, πρεσβύτερος, προσέχω: (vi) ὑπομηνυνθήκω: (vii) δεσπότης. 28

(8) Hermas: A i. 21. (i) ἁγεῖα, ἄλλος, βλαβερός, ἑλαττον (adv.), ἐντευεῖς, ὑπερπλεονάζω: (ii) βέλτιον, δειλία, ἐννοία, καταφθείρομαι, μηδέποτε, πραγματεία, χαλκεῖς, χρήσιμος: (iii) ἔγκρατης, ἐκστρέφω, πρεσβύτεις, φιλότεκνος: (iv) παρακαταθήκη: (v) σεμνότης: (vii) ὁφέλιμοι.
A 2. 54. (i) ἀντλαμβανόμαι, ἀποσπά σαμ, ἀπτιλος, βραδύναι, δίπλος, εἰσφέρω, ἐμπέπτω, ἐπιλαμβάνομαι, ἐπίσταμαι, ἐπιτιθημι, ἤσύχιος, θυγάκιω, ἰματισμός, κτίσμα, παραδέχομαι, περέργος, περιποιέομαι, πολυτελῆς, προσφέρομαι, σταταλῶ: (ii) βρέφος, ἐμπλέκομαι, κριτῆς, λίαν, μεταλαμβάνοι, μέντοι, μῆτσετε, προδότης, στεφανῶς, ὑμόρνησις, χαλεπός, χειμών, χρυσός: (iii) ἀνωφελής, αἰθαδής, ἤδονη, θηρίον, λεπίω, λυτρόμαι, μαίνω, νοσφίζομαι, ἄγνης: (iv) βλάσφημος, χείρων: (v) ἀργός, κοσμέω, μαρτυρία, νεώτερος, πρεσβύτερος, φιλόξενος: (vi) αἰτία, ποικίλος: (vii) ἀρνεόμαι, δεσπότης. 75

(9) Ep. ad Diognetum: A i. 7. (i) ἀπόδεκτος, θεοσέβεια, ὁμαλογουμένως, τεκνογονέω: (ii) γόης, χαλκεῖς: (iii) σωτηρίως.
A 2. 20. (i) ἀμελέω, ἐπίσταμαι, εἰεργεσία, κτίσμα, παραδέχομαι: (ii) ἀργύρεος, δρόμος, μεταλαμβάνω, χρύσος: (iii) ἢδονη, θηρίον, πειθαρχεῖα, φιλανθρωπία: (iv) βίος: (v) κοσμέω: (vi) αἰτία, ποικίλος: (vii) ἀρνεόμαι, δεσπότης, παρατέρωι. 27

(10) Papias: A i. 1. (v) διαβεβαιόμαι.
A 2. 3. (ii) μέντοι: (iv) παρακολουθέω: (v) πρεσβύτερος. 4

(12) Aristeides: A i. 1. (iii) ὄργαλος.
A 2. 6. (ii) ἀνοια, χειμών: (i) ἀνωφελής, μιαίνω: (iv) χείρων: (vi) μῦθος. 7

(13) Tatian: A i. 19. (i) ἅλλος, ἀμοιβή, ἀπρόσιτος, θεοσέβεια, μονόμαι, νοσεῖον, ὕπτερος, φιλαργυρία, ψευδολόγος: (ii) ἦλεω, ἄκρατῆς, γόης, πραγματεία, χρήσιμος: (iii) πρεσβύτεις: (v) πλῆκτρα, σεμνότης, σώφρον: (vii) ὁφέλιμοι.
A 2. 42. (i) ἀπόλαυσις, ἐκφέρω, ἐπιτιθημι, εἰεργεσία, ξοογονέω, θυήσκω, λοίδορια, μελετάω, ὅργομαι, προάγω, προσέρχομαι: (ii) ἀχάριστος, βρέφος, δρόμος, ζωγρέω, κριτής, λέων, λίαν, μεταλαμβάνω, στεφανῶς, φιλάργυρος,
APPENDIX I

153

(14) Justin: A 1. 40. (i) ἀλλως, ἀμοιβή, ἀνδροφόνος, ἀπέραιτος, ἀπόδεκτος, ἀποδοχή, διατροφή, ἐντυείς, ἐπίορκος, θεοσέβεια, καταλέγομα, κόσμος, μετάλημψις, ἡπτώς, ψευδολόγος: (ii) ἀκρατής, ἀνεξίκακος, ἀποτρέπω, βέλεντι, ἐνδύμα, καταφείρω, μηδέστετο, φιλαυτος, φιλόθεος, χρήσιμος: (iii) ἐκστρέφω, ἱουδαϊκός, σωτήρ, σωφρονίζω, σωφρόνος, φροντίζω: (iv) ἀνόσιος, πρόγονος, τυφόναι: (v) διαβεβαιώμαι, διάγω, σῳφρων: (vi) ἀνατρέπω: (vii) ὀφέλιμος.

A 2. 76. (i) ἀμελέω, ἀντιλαμβάνομαι, ἀποπλανάω, ἄσπιλος, διπλός, δυνά- στης, εἰσφέρω, ἐκφέρω, ἐμπίπτω, ἐπακολουθεῖ, ἐπιλαμβάνω, ἐπιτίθημι, ἐπιμέλωμαι, ἐπισκοπή, ἐπίσταμαι, ευσέβεω, θνήσκω, ἰματισμός, κτίσμα, μελετάω, νέοτης, ὀρέγομαι, παραδέχομαι, περίεργος, προαίω, προσέχομαι, προσημένο, σωφροσύνη: (ii) ἀνοια, ἀχάριστος, γεωργός, ἐπιτιμάω, κακούργος, κρητής, λέων, μάχαιμαι, μεταλαμβάνω, μέντοι, μῆτετο, ἔξωνος, σοφίζομαι, στερεός, στρατιώτης, χαλέπος, χρύσος: (iii) ἀνωφελής, ἥδονη, θηρίων, λατίω, λυτρόμα, μαίνω, πειθαρχέω, ὕγις, φιλανθρωπία: (iv) βίος, βλάσφημος, ἐκτρέφομαι, κήρυξ, παρακολουθεῖ, χεῖρον: (v) κατηγορία, κοσμέω, μαρτυρία, νεώτερος, ὄσιος, προσβύτερος, προσέχω: (vi) αἰτία, ἀπολείπω, ποικίλος: (vii) ἀρνέομαι, δεσπότης, εὐσέβεια, ζήτησις, μύθος, παρατέμαι.

(15) Athenagoras: A 1. 22. (i) αἰδός, ἄλλως, ἀνδροφόνος, ἀνεπίλημπτος, ἀπρόσιτος, ἐκγνωσμός, ἐπιτρέφομαι, ἅρμος, θεοσέβεια, καταλέγομαι, νοσεω, ἐπώνοια: (ii) ἀνεξίκακος, ἀνήμερος, πιστῶμαι, πραγματεία, φιλόθεος: (iii) ἀψιδής: (iv) ἀνόσιος, πρόγονοι: (v) διάγω: (vi) σῷφρων.

A 2. 37. (i) ἀμελέω, ἐμπίπτω, ἐπιμέλωμαι, εὐρεγεῖα, ἡσύχιος, θνήσκω, λοιδορία, παραδέχομαι, περίεργος, προαίω, προσέχομαι: (ii) γεωργός, λέων, μέντοι, ἔξωνος, στεφανῶ, χαλέπος: (iii) ἥδονη, θηρίων, κοσμέω, φιλανθρωπία: (iv) βίος, παρακολουθεῖ, χεῖρον: (v) κατηγορία, κοσμέω, νεώτερος, ὄσιος, προσβύτερος, προσέχω: (vi) αἰτία, ἦπομαινήσκω: (vii) δεσπότης: εὐσέβεια, μύθος, παρατέμαι.

(16) Melito: A 1. 2. (i) ἐπιπλήστω: (iv) πρόγονοι.

A 2. 3. (i) ἐμπίπτω, ἐπισταμαι: (vii) ζήτησις.

(17) Dionysius Cor.: A 1. (ii) ἀναψιχώ: (v) διάγω.
132 Words found in more than one Pauline Epistle, but not in the Apostolic Fathers.

Only nine of these occur in the Pastorals (B 1. 3, B 2. 6).

- 73 of these are wanting also in the Apologists, and of these only one ἀνυπόκριτος (Rom., 2 Cor., 1 and 2 Tim.) occurs in the Pastorals.

The number after each word indicates the number of Pauline epistles in which it occurs. Where no number is given, the word is in two Paulines only.

(i) Rom. 68 (•38).
  B 1. 2. (i) προνοεῖν: (ii) ἐνοικεῖν 3.
  B 2. 3. (i) παράκλησις 7: (ii) ἀπολογία 3: (iv) (ἀνυπόκριτος).
  C 1. 28 (•19) ἀγιωσύνης 3, διαστολή, ἐκδίκος, κρέας, παραζηλών, παρεισέρχομαι, τάχα, ποίμα, φθόγγος, (ἀποκαραδοκία, δοκιμή, δυνάμει, ἐλλογάω, ἐνδείξις 3, εὐσχημόνως 3, ἡττημα, καταλαγή, καταλάσσω 3, προσαγγέλλωμαι, προσαγαγή, σύμμορφος, συναιμαλλότος 3, συνθάπτομαι, νιοθεσία 3, ὑπερπερισσεῖς, ὑψωμα, φιλοτιμόμαι 3, φύραμα 3).


(2) 1 Cor. 49 (•20).
  B 1. 1. (v) ἀνέγκλητος.
  B 2. 4. (i) παράκλησις 7: (ii) ἀπολογία 3, ὄνομαξ 3, φωτίζω.
  C 1. 15 (•8) διαστολή, κρέας, παραζηλών, συναναμίγνυμαι, συνκράνω, φανέρωσις, φθόγγος, (εἰλεκρινία, ἡττημα, παιδαγωγής, στέγω, φύραμα, εὐσχημόνως 3, καταλάσσω 3, μετασχηματίζω 3).
  C 2. 29 (•12) ἐνεργής, ἠδιόντας, καθεύδω, καταπίνω, μεθύο, μωραίω, παρασκευάζω, καθό, ὄξως, ἀποστολή 3, θησαυρίζω 3, συμβιβάζω 3, ψαλμός 3, πλήν 3, ἀπολύτρωσις 4, φίλημα 4, κοινωνία 6, (ἀπρόσκοπος, ζυμώ,
Appendix I

karaioioma, efapaes, ou, anabema 3, apostasiom 3, panaurgia 3, evi 3, apetkedoima 4, stikw 6, sunevygos 7).

(3) 2 Cor. 48 (• 29).
   B. 2. (i) protovoi (ii) evonikw 3.

C 2. 18 (• 9) idwth, kathw, parasthen 3, frasiw, afew 3, thsantw 3, f Thanw 4, filh 4, kwnia 6, (acheiropoioi, ymwnth, dekatex斯塔, perseisth, edik 3, panaurgia 3, pereio 3, perisosth 4, sunevygos 7).

(4) Gal. 33 (• 21).
   B. 2. (i) anastroph 3.
   C. 1. 8 (• 7) allwew, (evarxoma, kadov 3, kuro, panaugw, perieferoma, viotheia 3, fyrma 3).


(5) Eph. 31 (• 16).
   B. 2. (i) anastroph 3: (ii) doymw 3, wotw.
   C. 1. 14 (• 10) alltheew, auzhia, vophia, omw, (apokatalalwsw, afw, epichorygia, balw, dfhaamoudla, prosagw, rizwma, swnxwv, viotheia 3, uperekerwsw).


(6) Phil. 24 (• 16).
   B. 2. (i) paraklh 3: (ii) aposth 3.
   C. 1. 10 (• 9) vophia, (apokaraadokia, dokymi 3, ellagw, evarxoma, enedeis, epichorygia, metaexematw, swnmyw, swnstwth).
C 2. 12 (• 7) δόμα, πρόφασις, πλήν 3, φθάνω 4, κοινωνία 6, *(ἀπρόσκοπος, ἀκυρός, ἄπεκδέχομαι 4, εὐδοκία 4, πειραστότερος 4, στήκω 6, συνεργός 7).

(7) Col. 27 (• 16).
B 1. 2. (ii) ἐνοικέω 3: (v) ἀνέγκλητος.
B 2. o.
C 1. 14 (• 12) θραμβεύω, ἤμος, *(ἀνακαινώ, ἀποκαταλάβω, ἀνέχομαι, ἀφίη, ἠρεθίζω, ἱκανός, ἰσότης, ὀφθαλμοδουλία, μιξόμαι, συναιχμάλωτος 3, συνεκτικοτέρους, συνθάπτωμαι).
C 2. 11 (• 4) καθεύθ, νεκρώ, πόσις, φόδη, συνβιβάζω 3, ψαλμός 3, ἀπολύτρωσις 4, *(ἀχειροποίητος, ἀσπασμός 3, ἐνι 3, συνεργός 7).

(8) 1 Thess. 23 (• 12).
B 1. o.
B 2. 1. (i) παράκλησις 7.
C 1. 8 (• 6) ἀγωστύνη 3, ἔκδικος, *(ἐπιβαρέως 3, εὐσχημόνως 3, θάλπω, στέγω, ὑπερεκτίμησις 3).
C 2. 14 (• 6) θώραξ, μεθυόμαι, πρόφασις, σβέννυμι, ἀνταποδίδωμι 3, ἐνκόπτω 3, φθάνω 4, φίλημα 4, *(μεθυόσκοιμαι, προείπων, περιποίησις 3, πειραστότερος 4, στήκω 6, συνεργός 7).

(9) 2 Thess. 13 (• 7).
B 1. o.
B 2. 1. (i) παράκλησις 7.
C 1. 4 (• 2) συναναμίγνυμαι, ἵππαιρομαι, *(ἐπιβαρεώς 3, στέλλομαι).
C 2. 8 (• 5) ἀναλίσκω, ἐνέχω, ἀνταποδίδωμι, *(ἀσπασμός 3, ἔκδικησις 3, περιποίησις 3, εὐδοκία 4, στήκω 6).

(10) Philem. 7 (• 3).
B 1. o.
B 2. 1. (i) παράκλησις 7.
C 1. 3 (• 2) τάχα, *(συναχμάλωτος 3, συνοπτικότης).
C 2. 3 (• 1) ἐνεργῆς, κοινωνία 6, *(συνεργός 7).

G.
Compounds with α-privative.

(1) Rom. 48 | B 1. 4. ἀδιάλειπτος, ἀστοργος, ἀτμία, ἀφθαρσία.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Appendix I</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(1) 1 Cor. 12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(2) 2 Cor. 27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(3) Gal. 12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(4) Eph. 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(6) 1. ἀλάλητος, ἀμετανόητος, ἀναπολόγητος, ἀνελεήμων, ἀνέξεραίνητος, ἀνώμοι, ἀσθένημα, ἀσύνθετος, ἀχρεόμαη, ἀδιαλείπτως, ἀμεταμέλητος, ἀνέξιχνιάστος.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C 2. 15. ἀβυσσος, ἄδιως, ἀκακος, ἀσχημοσύνη, ἀδύνατος, ἀτυμάξο, ἀσύνετος, ἀπειδέω, ἀκέραιος, ἀδικος, ἀκαθαρσία, ἀπεθεία, ἀσέλγεια, ἀσθενής, ἀφρων.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(7) Col. 10  
 a. p. p. 1-7  
| B 1 | 1. ἀνέγκλητος.  
| B 2 | 2. ἄφροστος, ἀλήθεια.  
| C 1 | 2. ἄθυμεόν, ἀφευδία.  
| C 2 | 5. ἀχειροποίητος,—ἀδικεώ, ἀκαθαρσία, ἄμωμος, ἀπειθεία.

(8) 1 Thess. 12  
 a. p. p. 2-2  
| B 2 | 2. ἀγνοεῖν, ἀθετεῖν.  
| C 1 | 3. ἀμέμπτως, ἀτακτος,—ἀδιαλέπτως.  
| C 2 | 7. ἀληθινός, ἀληθῶς, ἀσφάλεια,—ἀκριβῶς,—ἀκαθαρσία, ἀμεμπτως, ἀσθενής.

(9) 2 Thess. 7  
 a. p. p. 2-3  
| B 2 | 4. ἀνομοι, ἀδικία, ἀνομία, ἀλήθεια.  
| C 1 | 2. ἀτακτέω, ἀτάκτως.  
| C 2 | 1. ἀτοπος.

(10) Philem. 2  
 a. p. p. 1-6  
| C 1 | 1. ἀχρηστος.  
| C 2 | 1. ἄδικεόν.

(11) 1 Tim. 26  
 a. p. p. 4-1  
| A 1 | 7. ἀδηλότης, ἀνεπιλημμτος, ἀπέραντος, ἀπρόσιτος,—ἀνώσιος, ἀστοχεώ,—ἀμαχος.  
| A 2 | 5. ἀμελέω, ἀστιλος, ἀφιλάργυρος,—ἀνυπότακτος, ἀργός.  
| B 1 | 2. ἀθανασία, ἀνέγκλητος.  
| B 2 | 12. ἀγνοεῖν, ἀθετεῖν, ἀνομοι, ἀφροστος, ἀπιστία, ἀσεβίς, ἀσθενεια, ἀφθαρτος,—ἀνυπόκριτος, ἀνόητος, ἀπιστος, ἀλήθεια.

(12) 2 Tim. 24  
 a. p. p. 5-1  
| A 1 | 10. ἀκαίρως, ἀκρατής, ἀνεύκακος, ἀνεπαίσχυντος, ἀνήμερος, ἀπαθεντος, ἀσπονδος, ἀφιλάγαθος, ἀνώσιος, ἀστοχεώ.  
| A 2 | 2. ἀνοια, ἀχαρίστος.  
| B 1 | 4. ἀδιαλέπτως, ἀστοργος, ἀτιμία, ἀφθαρσία.  
| B 2 | 8. ἀδικία, ἀπιστεώ, ἀσθενεώ, ἀνυπόκριτος,—ἀδόκιμος, ἀπειθής, ἀσέβεια, ἀλήθεια.

(13) Titus. 18  
 a. p. p. 6-7  
| A 1 | 4. ἀκατάγνωστος, ἀφθορία, ἀφευνής, ἀμαχος.  
| A 2 | 3. ἀνουφελής,—ἀνυπότακτος, ἀργός.  
| B 1 | 1. ἀνέγκλητος.  
| B 2 | 10. ἀκαρπος, ἀληθης, ἀνομία, ἀσωτία,—ἀνόητος, ἀπιστος,—ἀδόκιμος, ἀπειθής, ἀσέβεια, ἀλήθεια.

### KEY TO DIAGRAMS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Diagr.</th>
<th>Paul</th>
<th>Pasts.</th>
<th>Total vocabulary, excluding proper names</th>
<th>Number of pages in W. H.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I A}</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>C I</td>
<td>{A</td>
<td>i-vi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II A</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>BC A</td>
<td>Not elsewhere in the ten Paulines a. p. p.</td>
<td>4 4-1 5-6 3-9 4-6 5-5 3-6 3-3 4 11-8 15-2 12-9 16-1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II B</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>C A i-iii</td>
<td>Not elsewhere in the thirteen epistles a. p. p.</td>
<td>261 266 197 85 93 76 58 41 26 10 306 173 114 81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>BC (r) A (r)</td>
<td>Not elsewhere in the ten Paulines including repetitions a. p. p.</td>
<td>336 415 264 100 106 81 60 47 31 10 437 223 107 88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>See pp. 32, 37</td>
<td>Number of words, including repetitions, which occur in at least five Paulines, but not in the Pastors a. p. p.</td>
<td>360 448 306 146 127 123 109 96 55 22</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>16½</td>
<td>8½</td>
<td>8½</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5½</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1½</td>
<td>13½</td>
<td>6½</td>
<td>4½</td>
<td>2½</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ditto ... average per page:

|        |        |        |        |        |        |        |          |          |        |        |        |
|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|--------|----------|----------|--------|--------|--------|--------|
| 4      | 4-1    | 5-6    | 3-9    | 4-6    | 5-5    | 3-6    | 3-3      | 4        | 11-8   | 15-2   | 12-9   | 16-1   |
| 10     | 11-1   | 12     | 10-3   | 10-6   | 12-7   | 9-7    | 7-5      | 8        | 22-4   | 27-3   | 24-4   | 30-4   |
| 32     | 237    | 177    | 80     | 84     | 67     | 55     | 33       | 21       | 8      | 253    | 127    | 81     |
| 8-8    | 9-9    | 10-7   | 9-7    | 9-6    | 11-2   | 9-2    | 6        | 7        | 6-4    | 18-5   | 20-1   | 17-4   | 16-9   |
| 30     | 34     | 21     | 20     | 10     | 32     | 32     | 32       | 32       | 38     | 38     | 38     | 38     |
| 30     | 34     | 21     | 20     | 10     | 32     | 32     | 32       | 32       | 38     | 38     | 38     | 38     |

II A 

II B 

III 

IV 

A eliminating B including} genuine notes

<p>| | | | | | | | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>VII</td>
<td>62</td>
<td></td>
<td>Shakespearean Hapax Legomena</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII</td>
<td>63</td>
<td></td>
<td>Pauline N. T. Hapax Legomena, acc. Workman</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX A</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>Not elsewhere in the N.T., but in the Apostolic Fathers or Apologists a. p. p.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X A</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>Not elsewhere in the ten Paulines, but in the Apostolic Fathers or Apologists a. p. p.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI C</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>Not elsewhere in the ten Paulines, but both in the Apostolic Fathers and in the Apologists a. p. p.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI D</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>Not elsewhere in the ten Paulines, but both in the Apostolic Fathers and in the Apologists a. p. p.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Rom.</th>
<th>1 Cor.</th>
<th>2 Cor.</th>
<th>Gal.</th>
<th>Eph.</th>
<th>Phil.</th>
<th>Col.</th>
<th>1 Thess.</th>
<th>2 Thess.</th>
<th>Phil.</th>
<th>Pastoralis</th>
<th>1 Tim.</th>
<th>2 Tim.</th>
<th>Titus</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>93</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-9</td>
<td>2-3</td>
<td>2-2</td>
<td>1-8</td>
<td>1-6</td>
<td>3-2</td>
<td>2-2</td>
<td>1-8</td>
<td>1-7</td>
<td>2-4</td>
<td>6-8</td>
<td>7-9</td>
<td>7-5</td>
<td>8-6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1-4</td>
<td>1-2</td>
<td>1-3</td>
<td>1-1</td>
<td>2-3</td>
<td>1-3</td>
<td>1-1</td>
<td>1-7</td>
<td>2-4</td>
<td>4-5</td>
<td>4-4</td>
<td>5-6</td>
<td>7-1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>195</td>
<td>197</td>
<td>131</td>
<td>59</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>211</td>
<td>118</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>57</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7-5</td>
<td>8-2</td>
<td>7-9</td>
<td>7-2</td>
<td>7-1</td>
<td>8-7</td>
<td>5-7</td>
<td>5-1</td>
<td>6-3</td>
<td>6-4</td>
<td>15-4</td>
<td>18-6</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>21-4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>147</td>
<td>156</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>50</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-6</td>
<td>6-5</td>
<td>5-8</td>
<td>5-7</td>
<td>5-9</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4-3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5-7</td>
<td>5-6</td>
<td>11-8</td>
<td>13-6</td>
<td>13-9</td>
<td>18-7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>165</td>
<td>158</td>
<td>104</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>156</td>
<td>92</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>44</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6-3</td>
<td>6-6</td>
<td>6-3</td>
<td>6-3</td>
<td>5-3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4-2</td>
<td>4-4</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4-8</td>
<td>11-4</td>
<td>14-5</td>
<td>13-3</td>
<td>16-5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>68</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>106</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4-5</td>
<td>4-9</td>
<td>4-1</td>
<td>4-8</td>
<td>4-1</td>
<td>4-3</td>
<td>2-8</td>
<td>3-3</td>
<td>4-3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7-8</td>
<td>9-5</td>
<td>9-2</td>
<td>13-9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Classification of Paul's Vocabulary

According to the Number of Epistles in Which Each Word Occurs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number of Epistles</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>7</th>
<th>8</th>
<th>9</th>
<th>10</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>B. In Paul and in the Pastorals.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B 1. Not elsewhere in the N. T.</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B 2. In other N. T. books also:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a. nouns, verbs, adjectives, &amp;c.</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β. particles, prepositions, pronouns, &amp;c.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total</strong></td>
<td>123</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>542</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>C. In Paul, but not in the Pastorals.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C 1. Not elsewhere in the N. T.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a. nouns, &amp;c.</td>
<td>462</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>573</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β. particles, &amp;c.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C 2. In other N. T. books:</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a. nouns, verbs, adjectives, &amp;c.</td>
<td>494</td>
<td>205</td>
<td>120</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td>960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β. particles, prepositions, &amp;c.</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total</strong></td>
<td>990</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>153</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td>1635</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total in Paul</strong></td>
<td>1113</td>
<td>396</td>
<td>230</td>
<td>126</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>2177</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE RESIDUE

82 Words found in the Pastorals, but not elsewhere in the N. T.,
nor in Goodspeed's Indices (Patristicus et Apologeticus).

άδηλονς i. Plut. J. Caes. 7; Polyb., Dion. Hal., Philo (άδηλος i Clem. xvi. 6; Ath. 5. 2; Ptolemaeus ii. 33).
αἵρετικός iii. Aelian, N. A. vi. 59; Schol. in Lucian 216. 19;
(προαιρετικός Cleomedes i. 6. 29).
ἀκαίρως ii. Epict. Diss. ii. 7. 1, iii. 22. 50 &c.; M. Aur. Com. iv. 19;
Galen, De Temp. 97. 29.
ἀκατάγγειλον iii. 2 Macc. iv. 47 (ἀκατάληπτος i Clem., Ath., οὐκενάστος Jus.).

ἀμαχος v. Aelian, N. A. ix. 41. 49 and passim; Lucian, Praec. i,
Vit. Aust. 22.

xii. 9. 2; Dio Chrys. Or. lxix (ed. Dindorf, vol. ii, p. 238, l. 3).

αντιδιατίθεμαι ii. Longinus, de Sublim. 17. 1 (άντιτιθεμαι Jus. Ap. 30. 1,

αντίθεσις i. Galen, De Temp. (ed. Helmreich, p. 4, l. 10); Lucian i.
Mort. Dial. x. 374; Plato, Aristotle.

αντιλυτρον i. Polyaenus, Excerpt. 52. 7, Orph. Lith. 587; Uncert. transl. of Ps. xlviii (xlix). 9.

απάλης i. Dio Chrys. i, p. 169; Galen i, p. 10; Lucian, De Merc.
Cond. c. 27; Toxar. 37, Philops. 29.

αποθησαυρίζω i. Aelian, N. A. iii. 10; Lucian, Alex. 23; Epict. Diss.
iii. 22. 50; Joseph. B. I. vii. 5. 2 &c.

ἄρτιος ii. Epict. i. 28. 3; M. Aurel. Com. i. 16.

ἀσπινδος ii. Galen, D. U. P. ii. 195. 15; Polyaenus, Strat. viii. 35,
65; Philo, De Sacrif. 4.

αθενίτω i. [P. Tebt. ii. 276. 28, late second or third century A.D.]
(αθενίτης Hermes, Sim. ix. 5. 6, αθενετικός 2 Clem. xiv. 3).

αὐτοκατάρκτοις iii. Philo ii. 652 (αὐτεταίνετος i Clem., κατάκριτος Ign.).

ἀφθορία iii. (ἀφθορος Justin, Diod.—ἀδίαφθορος Galen, D. U. P. i.
494. 14; Plut. Mor. v, p. 115 (820 A).

ἀφιλάγαθος ii. (φιλάγαθος Plut. Mor. 140 C.—ἀφιλόκαλος Plut., ἀπειρά-
γαθος Diod. &c.)
APPENDIX I


γάγγραπον ii. Galen, De Tumor 8, Com. 4 εἰς τὸ π. "Αρβρον, vol. xii, p. 437; Plut. Discr. cm. et adul. 36, 2. 65 D.


γραώδης i. Cleomedes, De MCCC. ii. 1. 89 (162. 14); Galen v. 120 B; Strabo i. 16.

γυμνασία. i. Epict. i. 7. 12, 8. 7 &c.; Arrian, Tact. xxxii. 2, xxxiii. 3; Galen, D. U. P. passim.

γυναικάρων ii. M. Aurel. Com. v. 11; Epict. Diss. ii. 18. 18, 22. 23 &c.

διαπαρατρίβη i. (παρατρίβη Ath. 18. 3, διατρίβη Dio Chrys. iv. 81. 23, Jus., Lucian, Hipp. 5 &c.; M. Aur. i. 4 &c.—κατοδιατρίβειν Schol. in Lucian 98. 23.)


ἐδραίωμα i. (ἐδραίος Ign., ἔδραξ w 1 Clem., Ign., Jus., Ath.—ἐδραίωτης Dio Chrys.)

ἐκδηλος ii. Dio Chrys. iv. 79. 17, vii. 141. 13 (272 R); 2 Macc. iii. 19. vi. 5.

ἐκζητήσις i. (ἐκζητέω 1 Clem. &c.—ζήτησις Justin, Melito.)

ἐλεγμος ii. LXX. Sir. xxi. 6; 2 Kings xix. 3 &c.


ἐπαρκέω i. Dio Chrys. vii, p. 122. l. 29 (243 R), 124. l. 13 (244 R); Epict. iii. 26. 8 &c.; Hom., Xen.

ἐπιδιωρθόν iii. (διωρθόμαι 1 Clem.)

ἐπιστομίωθι iii. Lucian, Dionys. 7; Plut., Plato.

ἐπιμετάδοτος i. M. Aur. i. 14, iii. 14, vi. 48.

θεόπνευσις ii. Plut. De Plac. Phil. v. 2. 3 (904 f.), Orac. Sib. 5. 406.

ἱεροπρεπὴς iii. Lucian, De Sacr. 13; Joseph.; 4 Macc. ix. 25, xi. 20; Plato, Philo.

καλοδιδασκαλος iii. (κακοδιδασκάλω 2 Clem. x. 5, -ία Ign. Eph. vi. 2 &c.)

καταστολή i. Epict. Diss. ii. 10. 15, 21. 11; Plut. Pericl. 5; Joseph. B. I. ii. 8. 4.

καταστρεπτικῶς i. Ign. ad Antiocch. c. 11.
κανονιδόμας i. Schol. in Lucian 137. 11; Strabo v. 1. 9 (p. 215)
[B. G. v. 952. 4, ii/α. d.]
κενοφόνα π α. Dioscorides, De Mat. Med. praef. 2 (κενοδοξία τι Clem.,
Ign., Herm.—ομοφόνα τι Clem.).
(κνήθαι Galen, D. U. P. i. 11. 15 &c.).
κοινωνίκος i. Epict. Diss. iii. 13. 5 and passim; Lucian, Tim. 56; M.
Aurel. Com. iii. 4. 2 &c.; Galen i. 12. 28; Polyb. ii. 44. 1;
Plat., Aristot.
λογομαχέω ii. (λογοτετω Αθ. Suppl. 2. 1, 31. 1, 32. 1; Lucian,
Cont. 12. 506.)
λογομαχία i. (λογοτετοί Αθ. Suppl. 3. 1.)
μάμμη ii. Epict. ii. 16. 28, 43 &c.; Plut., Appian, Joseph.; 4 Macc.
xvi. 9; Philo.
ματαιολόγος iii. (ματαιολογία Plut. Mor. 6 f.; Polycarp, Php. ii. 1.—
ματαιοπνία τι Clem., Galen, D. U. P. i. 56. 25.)
μεμβράνα ii. Cf. Horace, Serm. ii. 3. 1 f. 'Sic raro scribis, ut toto non
quater anno | membranam poscas', and Gai. Inst. ii. 77 'quod
in chartulis sive membranis meis aliquid scripsist, meum est'.
μηττραλής i. Lucian, Deor. Conc. 12; Aesch., Plat.
νέφυτος i. (νεόγαμο Arrian, Hist. i. 24. 2; Lucian, Mort. D. xix.
1. 410. νεόνυμφος Lucian, Asin. 34. 603 and numerous compds. of
νεο- in Lucian.)
νεφάλιος v. Appian, De Reb. Macc. ix. 9; Joseph. Ant. iii. 12. 2; Plut.
Mor. 132 ε.
νομίμως iv. Galen, ad Hipp. Aphor. 18; Athen. 1. p. 20 ε; Dio Chrys. De
Ex. Or. xiii. p. 246. l. 18 (427 ρ); Plut. Gaib. 15; Thuc., Xen., Plat.
ενοδοχέω i. Moeris, Lex. Att. p. 248; (ενοδοχός Plut. V. Alex. 51;
ενοκοτετωνεια Τα.).
οικοδεσποτέω i. Lucian, De Astrol. 20; Plut. De Plac. Phil. v. 18,
p. 1672 [908 ν] (οικοδεσπότης Epict. Diss. ii. 20. 20, iii. 22. 4).
οικοψαρός iii. Plut. Mor. 953 β (οικοψαρός τι Clem., i. 3, οικοψαρός
Galen, De Temp. ii. 606, De Vic. Att. 61. 20; Aelian, N. A. i. 22.
δρυστομία ii. LXX. Prov. xi. 5 (κανοτομία Ta. 35. 2; Lucian, Phil. ii. 9,
δροσιγνώμωνes Justin).
πάρωνος v. Lucian, Tim. 55; Plut. De Log. 504 β, Symp. 8 (716 ρ)
(παρονία, Dio Chrys. xxxii. 421. 22).
πατραλός i. M. Aur. Com. vi. 34.
περιπετεία i. Plut. Gaib. 27; Lucian, Joseph., Philo.
περιφρονεύ iii. Plut. Pericl. 31, Mor. 762 ε; 4 Macc. vi. 9, vii. 16.
M 2

πορισμός i. Joseph. B. I. ii. 21. 3; Plut. Mor. 524 D, Cat. Mai. 25;
Polyb. iii. 122. 2.

πρόκριμα i. (προκρίμων Jus. D. v. 5; Melito; Euseb. H. E. iv. 26. 13.)
σκέπασμα i. Joseph. B. I. ii. 8. 5; Aristot. (σκεπαρνον M. Aur. x. 38,
σκεπαστήριος Galen, D. U. P. i. 22. 4 &c.)

στάμαχος i. Dioscorides, De M. M. i. 17. 2 &c.; Galen, D. U. P.
iv. 15 &c.; M. Aur. x. 31. 35; Test. XII Patr. Neph. ii. 8.

οστρατολογέω ii. Plut., Joseph. (see Thayer, s. v.); Diod. Sic.;
Dion. Hal.

συνκακαπάθεϊ. ι. (συμπαθεων Jus. D. xxxviii. 2, κακαπάθεων 2 Clem. xix. 3.)

σωφρονισμός ii. Appian, Pun. viii. 65; Joseph. Ant. xvii. 9. 2, B. I.
i. 3; Plut. Mor. 712 c.

tεκνογονία i. Aristot. H. A. vii. 1. 8 (τεκνογονεώ Diogn. v. 6).
tεκνοτροφεώ i. Epict. i. 23. 3; Aristot. (τεκνοκτονεώ Ath. 20. 2, 35. 2).

υδροποτεώ i. Dioscorides, De M. M. vi. 7. 1; Lucian, Bis Acc. 16;
Macrob. 5; Aelian, Var. Hist. ii. 38; Xenophon.

υποτύπωσις iv. Galen (see Stephanus, Thes. s. v. ‘etiam inter Galeni
scripta, sed Latine tantum exstat ἐμπερικίς ἄγωγής ἔποτύπωσις).

ψηλοφρονέω i. (ψηλοφροσύνη, -φρον Herm., ταπεινοφροσύνη, -έω 1
Clem., Herm.)

φαϊλόνης ii. = paenula. Epict. iv. 8. 24; M. Aur. i. 16 (cf. Varr. ap.
Non. 537, 12; Juv. v. 79; Lampr. Alex. Sev. 27). C. H. Dodd
has drawn attention to two extremely interesting notes given in
Grenfell and Hunt's Oxyrhynchus Papyri, vol. xii. 1916, (1)
1583. Second cent. A. D. ... Γενοῦ παρὰ Ἰσθμωρον χάρα τού
φανόλου καὶ τοῦ ἐπικαρσίου καὶ ἀπένεκον παρὰ Καλύκην ... (2)
1489. Third cent. A. D. τὸ κιβώνων (=χιτωνών) ἐπιλέξῃμα παρὰ
Τεκοῦναν εἰς τον πιλώνα πέμψαν ὀμα ... (Expositor, viii. 88. April
1918).

φιλάγαθος iii. Plut. Mor. 140 c, Praec. Coni. 17; LXX. Sap. vii. 22;
Philo, Aristot.

φιλανδρος iii. Polyaeus, Strat. vii. 32. 34; Plut. Praec. coni. 28;
Lucian, Halc. 8, de Mer. 73.

φιλόφαρος i. Plut. Symp. 7 (701 a), V. Cicer. 2, V. Anton. 29, Mor.
39 a &c.; 4 Macc. v. 10 (φιλαρέω Ta. xxxiii. 1, -ia Ta. xxvi.
2 &c., ἀφιλόφαρος M. Aur. v. 5).

φρεναπάτης iii. (φρεναπατάω Gal. vi. 3.—φρενήρης M. Aur. viii. 51.)

ψευδώνυμοι i. Aelian, N. A. ix. 18; Plut. Mor. 479 E; Philo,
Aeschyl.
Phrases in the Pastorals and in early second-century non-Christian Writers.

(1) Οἱ γυμνασταὶ καὶ οἱ γε νομίμως ἀθλοῦντες Galen, ad Hippocr. Aphor. 18; cf. 2 Tim. ii. 5.

(2) Ἐὰν καλὸς ὁ οτριτπώτης γένη, τρίτῳ βαθμῷ (promotion) δυνῆγη εἰς πραγμάτων μεταβήναι, Hadriani Sententiae (Estienne, Thes. Graec. Ling. vol. xii. 2. 490 f.); cf. 2 Tim. ii. 3 ὃς καλὸς ὁ οτριτπώτης, i Tim. iii. 13 οἱ καλὸς διακονήσαντες βαθμὸν ἐαυτοῖς καλὸν περιποιοῦνται.

(3) γυναῖκας μὴ ὄμιλεν οὕνω ἀλλὰ ὑδροποτεύ̄νειν Aelian, Var. Hist. ii. 38; cf. 1 Tim. v. 23 μηκετί ὑδροπότευ, ἀλλὰ οὕνω ὀλίγῳ χρῶ διὰ τῶν στόμαχων κ. τ. . . . ἀσθενεῖας. Dioscorides, De M. M. v. 7. 1 ὃ δὲ καλοῦμεν σελήνης οὕνως δίδοται μὲν . . . τοῖς ἀσθενεῖς τὸν στόμαχον ἔχουσι καὶ . . . τοῖς ἀσθενεῖς τῇ κεφαλῇ ἔχουσι χρήσιμος δὲ καὶ γυναικῶν ὑδροποτεύ̄σας.


(5) ἀπόδου τῶν ῥημάτων τὴν τοσαύτην ἀπεραντολογίαν καὶ ἀντιβεβείως καὶ παρεισώσεις . . . καὶ βαρβαρισμοῦς κ. τ. ἀλλὰ βάρη τ. λόγων Lucian, Mort. D. x. 373 f.; 1 Tim. i. 6, vi. 20.

(6) εἰ Πλάτανος . . . κ. Ἀριστοτέλος ἔκλαβομενος καθήσαι, τ. ὁμοῖον πεπονθὸς τοῖς τὰ διὰ πτερῷ κυωμένοι . . . Lucian, Ῥητ. praec 11. 12, 2 Tim. iv. 3.

(7) ἡγήσῃ λόγους M. Aurel. viii. 30; Titus ii. 8. ὅρθῳ καὶ ὑγιεὶ καὶ ἀνεπιλήπτῳ βίῳ χρόνει Lucian, Demon. 3; ἐν ὑγιανοῦσῃ τῇ φυχῇ Lucian, Longae. 209; cf. Titus i. 13, i Tim. iii. 2 &c.

(8) πλανώται κατὰ τὸν βίον δοσι ψυχαὶ . . . δεδουλωμέναι δὲ ἡδοναῖς, φιλήδουοι, καὶ φιλοσοφοῦσι βίῳ αἰτοχρὸν  . . . οὐχ ἐλύμεναι ζῶσιν, ἀλλὰ ἐνεχθεῖσι πρὸς αὐτῶν Dio Chrys. iv. p. 85 (178 ῥ); cf. Titus iii. 3 πλανώμενοι, δουλεύοντες . . . ἡδοναῖς. 2 Tim. iii. 5 f. φιλήδουοι . . . ἀγόμενα ἐπιθυμίαις . . .

(9) εἰ προγόνων Phlegon Trallianus 31; cf. οἱ πρόγονοι σου . . . ὃ μὲν πάππος σου Ἀριανὸς . . . ὃ δὲ πατὴρ σου . . . σὺ δὲ . . . πεπελεγμέθα πάντα πράσσεις Melito (Eus. H. E. iv. 26); cf. 2 Tim. i. 5.

(10) Ἀνθρωποὺς μὲν εἶναι σοφὸν κ. δίκαιον κ. τῶν οἰκεῖων παῖδων προμηθειστατον, κ. τῶν γεωμέρων ποιεῖσθαι τὴν προσήκουσαν φροντίδα, Aelian N. A. ἐπομ.; cf. i Tim. iii. 4 f., v. 8.
APPENDIX II

A.

STEREOTYPED PHRASES IN THE PASTORALS

παράγγελλε ταῦτα κ. δίδασκε, I. iv. 11; ταῦτα δίδασκε κ. παρακάλει, I. vi. 2.

καὶ ταῦτα παράγγελλε, I. v. 7; ταῦτα ὑπομιμήσακε, II. ii. 14.

ταῦτα λάλει, καὶ παρακάλει καὶ ἐλεγχεῖ, Titus ii. 15; ταῦτα φεύγε I. vi. 11.

Cf. ταῦτα ὑποτιθέμενος &c., I. iv. 6; ταῦτα μελέτα, I. iv. 15; ταῦτα παράθυον, II. ii. 2.

μάθεις (κτλ.) παρατοῦ, I. iv. 7, v. 11, II. ii. 23, Titus iii. 10.

κενοφώνεις (μάχας) περίπατασο, II. ii. 16, Titus iii. 9.

δι' ἥν αἰτιάν, II. i. 6, 12; Titus i. 13.

eἰ παντὶ ἐργῷ ἀγαθῷ ἐπηκολούθησε, I. v. 10.

ἐπ' αὐτὸν ἠγαθὸν ἠγαθὸν ὑπομιμησάτων, II. ii. 21.

πρὸς τὸν ἐργὸν ἀγαθὸν ἐξηρτισμένον, II. iii. 17.

πρὸς τὸν ἠγαθὸν ἠδόκιμον, Titus i. 16; (ἐτοίμους), Titus iii. 1.

ἐν τῷ νῦν αἰῶνι, I. vi. 17; II. iv. 10; Titus ii. 12. Paul writes ἐν τ. αἰῶνι τοῦφι, Rom. xii. 2; I Cor. i. 20, ii. 6, 8, iii. 18; 2 Cor. iv. 4; Eph. i. 21.

τῆς (τῆς) ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, I. i. 14, iii. 13; II. i. i. 9, 13, ii. i. 10, iii. 15.

ἐργα καλά, I. iii. i. v. 10, 25, vi. 18; Titus ii. 7, 14, iii. 8, 14.

(κατὰ) εἰς ἐπίγνωσιν ἀληθείας, I. ii. 4; II. ii. 25, iii. 7; Titus i. 1.

ἐμπίπτειν εἰς παγίδα, I. iii. 7, vi. 9; cf. II. ii. 26.

ζην εἰσεβώς, II. iii. 12; Titus ii. 12; cf. I. ii. 2.

περὶ τὴν πίστιν ἐνανάγχασαν, I. i. 19, (ἡστόχχασαν) vi. 21; (ἀδόκιμοι)

Π. iii. 8.

περὶ τὴν ἀληθείαν ἡστόχχασαι, II. ii. 18.

(Paul uses περὶ with accusative only once, Phil. ii. 23 ἀπὸ περὶ ἐμέ.)

τῶν καλῶν ἄγιων ἄγιων, II. iv. 7; I. vi. 12.

ἀνθρωπος θεοῦ, I. vi. 11; II. iii. 17.

διαπαρατηρεῖα διεφθαρμένων ἀνθρώπων τ. νοῦν, I. vi. 5.

ἀνθρωποί κατεφθαρμένου τ. νοῦν, II. iii. 8.

μερίσαται αὐτῶν ... ὡς νοῦς, Titus i. 15.

μᾶς γυναικὸς ἀνήρ, I. iii. 2, 12; Titus i. 6; ἐνὸς ἄνδρος γυνῆ, I. v. 9.
APPENDIX II

167

év katharís suneídóseu, I. iii. 9; II. i. 3.
ēk katharás kardías (k. suneídósewos ágathís), I. i. 5; II. ii. 22.
ēxon ágathín suneídoun, I. i. 19; cf. I. iv. 2; Titus i. 15.
pistós ó lógos, I. i. 15, iii. i, iv. 9; II. ii. 11.
tou katá týn dídachýn pístou lógu, Titus i. 9.
týs kalís didaskalías ἡ parēkleōúthenas, I. iv. 6.
purēkoloúthenas món tý didadaskalía, II. iii. 10.

Σ. ἡ υγιάνουσα didaskalía, I. i. 10; II. iv. 3; Titus i. 9, ii. 1.
υγιάνοτες lógoi, I. vi. 3; II. i. 13; Titus ii. 8.
υγιάνειν tý pístei, Titus i. 13, ii. 2.

B.

PAULINE PHRASES IN THE PASTORALS

The reference before a phrase applies to the Pastorals, that after a phrase applies to the Pauline epistle in question.

i. Romans.

1 Tim. i. i kai' ἐπιταγήν Θεοῦ, xvi. 26.
i. 5 ἐν δὲ τέλος . . . , vi. 22; cf. πλήρωμα νόμου ἡ ἀγάπη, xiii. 10.
i. 8 οἴδαμεν δὲ ὅτι καλὸς ὁ νόμος . . . : cf. οἴδαμεν δὲ ὅτι ἄσα ὁ νόμος λέγει
tois en t. νόμων λέγει, iii. 19; σύνθημι τῷ νόμῳ ὅτι καλός, vii. 16.
i. 10 καὶ εἰ τί έτερον; cf. καὶ εἰ τίς έτερα ἐντολή, xiii. 9.
i. 14 ὑπερεπλέονασε δὲ ἡ χάρις του Κυρίου ήμῶν: cf. οὗ δὲ ἐπελεώνασεν
ἡ ἀμαρτία ὑπερεπρέσευσεν ἡ χάρις, v. 20; ἡ χάρις τ. Κυρίου ήμῶν
Ἱρσου, xvi. 20.
i. 15 X. I. ἦλθεν εἰς τ. κόσμον ἀμαρτωλοῦς σῶσαι: cf. έτι ἀμαρτωλῶν
όντων X. ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἀπέθανε . . . ἡ ἀμαρτία εἰς τ. κόσμον εἰσήλθε,
v. 8, 12.
i. 16 πιστεύειν ἐπ' αὐτῶ, ix. 33, x. 11; cit. Isa. xxviii. 16; εἰς ξωὴν
αιώνιον, v. 21.
i. 17 τῷ δὲ . . . μόνω Θεῷ . . . δόξα εἰς τ. αἰώνας ἀμήν, xvi. 25, 27.
i. i πρῶτων . . . παιείσθαι εὐχαριστίας: cf. πρῶτον μὲν εὐχαριστῶ, i. 8.
i. 7 ἀληθείαν λέγω, οὐ ψεύδομαι, ix. 1; ἐγὼ . . ἀπόστολος . . ἐθνῶν, xi. 13.
ii. 7, vi. 9 εἰς παιδία, xi. 9; cit. Ps. lxix. 23.
iv. 13 τῇ παρακλήσει, τῷ δίδασκαλῷ: cf. xii. 8.
v. 18 λέγει γὰρ ἡ γραφή, ix. 17, x. 11.
vi. 4 φθόνος, ἔρις . . . διεφθαρμένων ἀνθρώπων τ. νοῦν κ. ἀπεστηρημένων
τ. ἀληθείας: cf. ἀνθρώπων τῶν τ. ἀληθείαν ἐν ἀδικίᾳ κατεχόντων . . .
eis ἀδόκιμον νοῦν . . . μετοικοὺς φθόνου . . ἔρωτις, i. 18, 28 ff.
vi. 11 διώκει δικαιοσύνην: cf. ix. 30 (τὰ μὴ διώκοντα δικαιοσύνην), xii. 13.
2 Tim. i. 1, 13, ii. 1, 10, iii. 15 τῆς (τῆ) ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, iii. 24, viii. 39.

i. 3 f. Χάριν ἔχω τ. Θεῷ ὃς ἀληθεύω ... ὡς ἀδιάλειπτον ἔχω τ. περὶ σοῦ μνείαν ἐν ταῖς δεήσεις μου, ἐπιτοθῶν σε ἴδειν ἵνα: cf. χάρις τ. Θεῷ, vi. 17; εἰχαριστῶ τ. Θεῷ ... ὃς ἀληθεύω, ὡς ἀδιάλειπτος μνείαν ὑμῶν ποιοῦμαι ... ἐπὶ τῶν προσευχῶν μου, δεόμενος ... ἐπιτοθῶ γὰρ ἴδειν ὑμᾶς, ἵνα ... , i. 8–11.

i. 5 τῆς ἐν σοὶ ... πίστεως ... , i. 12; οἶδα γὰρ ὃς πεπίστευκα: cf. ἡ πίστις ὑμῶν, i. 8; ... διὰ τῆς ἐν ἀλλήλοις πίστεως ὑμῶν τε καὶ ἵμαστοι, i. 12.

i. 5 πεπίστευμαι δὲ ὅτι καὶ, xv. 14.

i. 6 χάρισμα, i. 11.

i. 6 τὸ χάρισμα τοῦ Θεοῦ, vi. 23.

i. 7 οὐ γὰρ ἔδωκεν ἡμῖν ὁ Θεός πνεῦμα δειλιᾶς, ἀλλὰ δυνάμεως καὶ: cf. οὐ γὰρ ἐλάβετε πνεῦμα δουλείας πάλιν εἰς φόβον, ἀλλὰ ... , viii. 15; ἐν δυνάμει πνεύματος ἁγίου, xv. 13; ἔδωκεν αὐτοῖς ὁ Θεός πνεῦμα κατανίκτεως, xi. 8; cit. Isa. xxix. 10.

i. 8 μὴ ἐπαναχυνθῆς τὸ μαρτύριόν ... , i. 12 οὐκ ἐπαναχύνοιμαι cf. i. 16.

i. 9 τοῦ καλοῦντος ... οὐ κατὰ τ. ἐργα ἡμῶν: cf. οὐκ ἔξ ἐργῶν ἀλλ' ἐκ τ. καλοῦντος, ix. 11; contrast ἀποδώσει ἐκάστῳ κατὰ τὰ ἐργα αὐτοῦ, ii. 6.

i. 9 ἀλλὰ κατὰ ἴδιαν πρόβεσιν καὶ χάριν, τὴν δοθείσαν ἡμῖν ἐν X. I. πρὸ χρόνων αἰωνίων, φανερωθέσαι δὲ νῦν διά ... : cf. τοὺς κατὰ πρόβεσιν κλητοὺς, viii. 28; κατὰ τὴν χάριν τὴν δοθείσαν ἡμῖν, xii. 6; ἐν X. I. vi. 11 &c.; χρόνοις αἰωνίοις σεσυγγενέου, φανερωθέντος δὲ νῦν διά ... , xvi. 25.

i. 10 ζωῆν καὶ ἀφθαρσίαν: cf. ii. 7.

i. 12 οἶδα καὶ πέπεσομαι ὅτι δυνατός ἐστιν, xiv. 14, xi. 23.

i. 13 ἀγάπη τῇ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, viii. 39.

i. 14 διὰ Πνεύματος Ἁγίου τοῦ ἐνοικοῦντος ἐν ἡμῖν, v. 5, viii. 11.

i. 14 ὁ τὰ χάριτι τῇ ἐν X. I.: cf. v. 15, iii. 24.

i. 14 ἦν ἐγγυμμένοιν ἐκ νεκρῶν: cf. iv. 24, vi. 4, 9. ἐκ σπέρματος Δαβίδ, i. 3; κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγελίων μου, ii. 16, xvi. 25.

i. 14 εἰ γὰρ συνεπεθάναμεν, κ. συνεξήσομεν, vi. 8.

i. 14 εἰ ὑπομένεκαν, καὶ συν ... : cf. εἰπερ συμπάτσχομεν ἵνα κ. συνδοξα-σθῶμεν, vii. 17: cf. i Cor. iv. 8.

i. 14 εἰ ἀπιστοῦμεν κτλ.: cf. iii. 3.

i. 15 σχετικῶν δόκιμων παρουσίσαται τ. Θεῷ: cf. vi. 13, xiv. 18.

i. 20 σκεύη & μὲν εἰς τιμήν & δὲ εἰς ἀτμίαν, ix. 21.

i. 22 διόκει δικαιοσύνην ... εἰρήνην: cf. ix. 30, xiv. 19.

i. 25 μήπωτε δφὴ αὐτοῖς ὁ Θεὸς μετάνοιαν: cf. ii. 4.
APPENDIX II

iii. 1 toio toino, dti, vi. 6.

iii. 2 ἀλαζόνες, ὑπερήφανοι, γονεῖσιν ἀπεθεῖσ, ἀστοργοὶ, i. 30 f.

Titus i. 2 ἢν ἐπηγγελλατο πρὸ χρόνων αἰωνίων, ἐφανέρωσεν δὲ . . . κατ’ ἐπιταγὴν τοῦ . . . Θεοῦ: cf. δ’ προεπηγγελλατο, i. 2; χρόνους αἰωνίους . . . φανερωθέντος δὲ . . . κατ’ ἐπιταγὴν τ. Θεοῦ, xvi. 26.

i. 2 δ’ ἀψευδός Θεὸς: cf. iii. 3.


ii. 5 ἡμι δ’ λόγος τ. Θεοῦ βλασφημήται: cf. ii. 24; cit. Isa. liii. 5 (ὄνομα τ. Θεοῦ). Cf. i Tim. vi. 1 ἡμὶ τὸ ὄνομα τ. Θεοῦ . . . βλασφημήται.

iii. 1 ἑξωσίας ὑποτάσσεσθαι, xiii. i.

iii. 4 ἡ χρηστότης Θεοῦ, xi. 22.

iii. 7 δικαιωθέντες τῇ ἐκείνου χάριτι, iii. 24: cf. v. i.

ii. 1 Corinthians.

1 Tim. i. 2 Τιμοθέου τέκνω, iv. 17.

i. 3 ἐν Ἑφέσῳ, xvi. 8.

i. 12 εἰς διακονίαν, xvi. 15.

i. 12 πιστὸν μὲν ἡγήσατο . . . ἡλείηθην: cf. ἡλεμιένος ὑπὸ Κυρίου πιστὸς εἶναι, vii. 25.

i. 20 οὗς παρέδωκα τῷ Σατανᾷ ἡμα . . .: cf. κέκρικα παραδοθῶν τ. τουσίτων τ. Σατανά. ἡμα, v. 5.

ii. 3 τοῦτο καλῶν, vii. 26.

ii. 7 ἡτέθην ἐγὼ ἀπόστολος κ. διδάσκαλος: cf. οὗς μὲν έθετο δ’ Θεὸς ἀποστόλους . . . τρέτον διδασκάλους, xiii. 28.

ii. 8 προσέχεσθαι τ. ἀνδρᾶς: cf. xi. 4.

ii. 9 δ’ πρέπει γυναικὶ: cf. πρέπον ἐστὶ γυναίκα ἀκατάκλυπτον τ. Θεώ προσέχεσθαι, xi. 13.

ii. 11 f. γυνὴ μανθανέων ἐν πάσῃ ὑποταγῇ, διδάσκαις δὲ γυναίκα ὦν ἐπιτρέπω . . . ἄλλα εἶναι ἐν ἡπνῷα: cf. αἰ γυναίκες ἐν τ. ἑκκλησίας συγάνωσι, οὐ γὰρ ἐπιτρέπεται αὐτοῖς λαλέων, ἄλλα ἐποτασσόμεθα . . ., xiv. 34 f.

ii. 13 Ἀδὰμ γὰρ πρῶτος κτλ.: cf. xi. 8, xv. 22, 45.

ii. 15 σωθήσεται δὲ διὰ, iii. 15: cf. vii. 16. ἐὰν μάνωσιν, vii. 8, 20, 40.

iii. 6 ἡμὶ εἰς κρίμα, xi. 34.

v. 18 Βοήν ἀλοιπού ὁμμοίως, ix. 9: cit. Deut. xxv. 4.

v. 19 ἐκτὸς εἰ μὴ, xiv. 5, xv. 2.


2 Tim. i. 2 Τιμοθεῷ ἀγαπητῷ τέκνῳ . . . ἀναμιμήσκω σε: cf. Τιμόθεου, ὦς ἐστὶ μον τέκνων ἀγαπητῶν . . . ὦς ὑμᾶς ἀναμίμησει, iv. 17.
APPENDIX II

i. 10 καταργήσαντος τὸν θάνατον: cf. καταργεῖται ὁ θάνατος, xv. 26.
ii. 4 f. εἶν δὲ καὶ, vii. 28 (ἀρέση, vii. 33).
ii. 5 οὐ στεφανοῦται εἶν μὴ κτλ.: cf. ix. 25.
ii. 6 τὸν κοπιῶντα γεωργόν κτλ.: cf. ix. 7, 10–14, iv. 12.
ii. 12 καὶ συνβασιλεύσουμεν, iv. 8.

Titus 3. 7. λόγον αὐτοῦ ἐν κηρύγματι: cf. ὁ λόγος μου κ. τ. κήρυγμά μου, ii. 4.

1 Tim. i. 3 εἰς Μακεδονίαν. i. 16, ii. 13, vii. 5.

i. 3 καὶ εἰς ἐναγχέλιον τῆς δόξης τοῦ (Θεοῦ), iv. 4 (Χριστοῦ ... Θεοῦ).
i. 12 θέμενος εἰς διακονίαν: cf. θέμενος ἐν ἥμιν τ. λόγον ... δόντος ... τ. διακονίαν, v. 18 f.

ii. 18 ἵνα στρατεύῃ ... τ. καλῶν στρατεύαι: cf. στρατευόμεθα ... τ. ὑπλα τ. στρατεύας, x. 3 f.

ii. 3 καλῶν ἐνώπιον τ. Θεοῦ: cf. καλὰ ... ἐνώπιον Κυρίου, viii. 21.

ii. 13 f. Εὐδ. ... ἡ γνή ἐξαπατηθείσα: cf. ὁ ὄφις ἐξηπάτησεν Ἐβαν, xi. 3; cit. Gen. iii. 13 (ἡπάτησεν).

iii. 15 ἐν οἷς Θεοῦ ἀναστρέφεσθαι: cf. ἐν χάριτι Θεοῦ ἀνεστράφημεν ἐν τ. κόσμῳ, i. 12.

iii. 16 ἑπανερώθη ἐν σαρκί, iv. 10 f.

iv. 10 ἡλπίκαμεν ἐπὶ Θεῷ ἡωτὶ: cf. ἐπὶ τ. Θεῷ εἰς ἡλπίκαμεν, i. 9 f.

iv. 12 ἐν λόγῳ ... ἐν ἀγάπη ... ἐν ἀγνείᾳ: cf. ἐν ἀγνότητι ... ἐν ἀγάπῃ ... ἐν λόγῳ, vi. 6 f.

iv. 13 τῇ ἀναγνώσει, iii. 14.

v. 14 μηδεμίαν ἀφορμὴν διδόναι τῷ ἀντικειμένῳ λοιποῖς χάραν: cf. ἀφορμὴν διδόντες, v. 12; μηδεμίαν διδόντες προσκοπῆν, ἀνὰ μὴ μωρεθῆ, vi. 3.


2 Tim. i. 15 οἶδας τοῦτο ὅτι ἀπεστάφυγον με πάντες οἱ ἐν τῇ Ἀσίᾳ: cf. οὐ θέλομεν ὑμᾶς ἀγνοεῖν περὶ τ. θλίψεως ἡμῶν τῆς γενομένης ἐν τ. Ἀσίᾳ, i. 8.

ii. 10 δόξης αἰωνίου: cf. αἰώνιον βάρος δόξης, iv. 17. πάντα ὑπομένω διὰ τ.
APPENDIX II

171

APPENDIX

1 Titus i. 3 f. κατ’ ἐπιταγὴν ... Τίτω γυγρῷν: cf. Τίτων ... κατ’ ἐπιταγὴν ...
tὸ τ. ὑμετέρας ἀγάπης γυνῶν, viii. 6, 8.

iv. Galatians.

1 Tim. i. 2 ἐν πίστει, ii. 20.
i. 7 θέλοντες εἶναι νομοδιδάσκαλοι: cf. ἐπὶ νόμον θέλοντες εἶναι, iv. 21.
i. 13 τὸ πρότερον ὅντα διώκτην: cf. iv. 13, i. 13.
ii. 5 εἰς Θεός, εἰς καὶ μεσίτης ...: cf. ὁ δὲ μεσίτης ἐνὸς οὐκ ἐστιν, ὁ δὲ Θεός εἰς ἐστίν, iii. 19 f.
ii. 6, Tit. ii. 14 Χ. ὅ δε οἱ ἀντών ὑπὲρ πάντων: cf. I. Χ. τοῦ δόντος ἀντῶν ὑπέρ, i. 4, ii. 20.

11 εἶκηρύχθη ἐν ἐθνεσι: cf. ὁ κηρύσσων ἐν ἐθνεσι, ii. 2.
v. 3 μάλιστα οἰκειῶν: cf. μάλιστα πρὸς τ. οἰκείους (τ. πίστεως), vi. 10.
vi. 3 εἰ τις ἑτεροδιδασκαλεῖ: cf. μετατίθεσθε εἰς ἑτερον εὐαγγέλιον δ σῦ ἐστιν ἄλλο, i. 6 f.; εἰ τις ὑμᾶς εὐαγγελίζεται παρ' ὑ' ἐλάβετε, i. 9.

2 Tim. i. 1 κατ' ἐπαγγελίαν, iii. 29.

Titus iii. 3–7 ἥμεν ... ποτε καὶ ἥμεις ἀνόητοι ... δούλευόντες ... ὅτε δὲ ... κληρονόμοι: cf. καὶ ἥμεις, ὅτε ἥμεν νήπιοι, ... ἥμεν δεδουλωμένοι: ὅτε δὲ ... κληρονόμοι, iv. 3–7.

v. Ephesians.

1 Tim. i. 14 μετὰ πίστεως καὶ ἀγάπης: cf. ἀγάπη μετὰ πίστεως, vii. 23.
i. 15 ἀμαρτωλόνς διὸ πρῶτος ἐλαμ. ἐγὼ: cf. ἐμοί τ. ἐλαχιστοτέρῳ κτλ., iii. 8.
iii. 16 ἢν ἐν ἐμοὶ ἐνδείχθαι X. I. ἑταίρων μακροθυμίαν: cf. ἢν ἐνδείχθαι ... ἐφ’ ἥμας ἐν X. I., ii. 7; μετὰ μακροθυμίας, iv. 2; Exod. ix. 16.
ii. 1 δεσποινής ὑπὲρ πάντων: cf. δεσποινής ὑπὲρ πάντων τ. ἁγίων, vi. 18.
iii. 8 προσεύχονται ὑπὲρ πάντων: cf. προσέχει ὑπὲρ πάντων τ. ἁγίων, vi. 18 (καρφ.).
iii. 9 τέκνα ἔχοντα ἐν ἐπιταγῇ: cf. τέκνα ἐπακούστε τ. γονέων, vi. 1.
iii. 8 μὴ ὑπὸ πολλῷ προσέχοντας: cf. μὴ μεθοδεύσθε μὴ ὑπὸ πολλῷ, v. 18.
iii. 16 μέγα ἐστὶ τὸ τ. εὐσεβείας μυστήριον (cf. ἐκκλησία, vs. 15): cf. τὸ μυστήριον τοῦτο μέγα ἐστὶ, λέγω εἰς ... τ. ἐκκλησίαν, v. 32.
vi. 1 f. δοῦλοι ... δουλεύοντες: cf. vi. 7.
vi. 13 Θεοῦ τ. εἰς τὰ πάντα: cf. i. 10.

2 Tim. i. 8 ἐμὲ τὸν δέσμον αὐτοῦ: cf. ἐγὼ ὁ δέσμος ἐν Κυρίῳ, iii. 1, iv. 1.
APPENDIX II

173

i. 10 φωτισαντος... διὰ τ. εὐαγγελίου: cf. εὐαγγελίσασθαι καὶ φωτίσαι, iii. 9.
ii. 1 ἐνδυμαμοῦ ἐν τ. χάριτι τ. ἐν Χ. Ι.: cf. ἐνδυμαμοῦθε ἐν Κυρίῳ, vi. 10.
ii. 15 τὸν λόγον τῆς ἀληθείας, i. 13.
iv. 3 κατὰ τὰς ἐπιθυμίας τ. ἱδιὰς: cf. κατὰ τὰς ἐπιθυμίας τ. ἀπάτης, iv. 22.

Titus i. 5 τούτων χάριν, iii. i, 14.
ii. 5 ὑποτασσομένας τοῖς ἱδίοις ἀνδράσι, ν. 21 f.
ii. 9 δούλους ἱδίοις δεσπότασις ὑποτάσσεσθαι: cf. οἱ δοῦλοι ὑπακούετε τοῖς κατὰ σάρκα κυρίοις, ν. 5.
iii. 3–5 ἢμεν... ποτὲ καὶ ἢμεῖς... ἐπιθυμίαις... χρηστότης... οὐκ εἴ ἔργων... ἔσωσεν ἠμᾶς διὰ λουτροῦ... διὰ Ι. Χ.... πλούσιως... τῇ ἐκείνῳ χάριτι: cf. καὶ ἢμεῖς... ποτὲ ἐν τ. ἐπιθυμίαις... ἢμεθα... πλούσιος ὅν... τὸ... πλούτος τῆς χάριτος αὐτοῦ ἐν χρηστότητι ἐφ' ἠμᾶς ἐν Χ. Ι. τῇ γὰρ χάριτι ἐστε σεσωσμένοι... οὐκ εἴ ἔργων, ii. 3–7; καθαρίσασι τῷ λουτρῷ, ν. 26.

vi. Philippians.

1 Tim. i. 2 Τιμοθέω γνησίω τέκνῳ: cf. Τιμόθεου... ὅτι ὡς πατρὶ τέκνον...,
ii. 19, 22 (γνήσιε, iv. 3).
ii. 8 χωρίς ὄργης καὶ διαλογισμοῦ: cf. χωρίς γογγυσμῶν καὶ διαλογισμῶν, ii. 14.
iv. 3 μέτα εὐχαριστίας, iv. 6.
iv. 12 τίτοις γίνεσθαι: cf. iii 17.
iv. 15 ἢνα σου ἡ προοπτή φανερα ἢ πᾶσι: cf. i. 12 f., 25.
v. 4 μηδεμιάν... τῷ ἀντικειμένῳ: cf. i. 28.
v. 4 φθόνοις, ἐρις, i. 15.

2 Tim. i. 3 ἐν τ. δεξιόσει μου: cf. ἐν πάσῃ δεξιώσει μου, i. 4.
i. 4 ἢνα χαρᾶς πληρωθῶ: cf. πληρώσατε μου τὴν χαράν, ii. 2.
i. 10 σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ι. Χ.: cf. σωτῆρα... Ι. Χ., iii. 20.
i. 13 ἐν παρ' ἐμοὶ ἦκουσας: cf. ἐν ἦκουσας ἐν ἐμοὶ, iv. 9.
ii. 3 ὅσος καλὸς στρατιώτης Χ. Ι.: cf. τ. συνστρατιώτην μου, ii. 25.
ii. 9 μέχρι δεσμῶν... ὁ λόγος τ. Θεοῦ ὃν δέδεται: cf. ii. 30, i. 12–17 f.
i. 16–18: cf. ii. 25–30, p. 129 f.

Titus i. 10 μάλιστα οἱ ἐκ τῆς, iv. 22.

vii. Colossians.

1 Tim. i. 1 X. Ι. τῆς ἐλπίδος: cf. i. 27.
i. 4 οἰκονομίαν Θεοῦ, i. 25.
i. 17 ἀπορµθῇ Θεῷ, i. 15.
APPENDIX II

173

iii. 7 δει δε και μαρτυριαν καλην έχειν ἀπ' των έξωθεν: cf. iv. 5.

iii. 15 ἵνα εἶδης τῶς δει... iv. 6.

iii. 16 το μυστήριον... δις έφανερώθη: cf. τδ μυστήριον έφανερώθη, i. 26.

iv. 3, 6 τούς πιστούς κ. ἐπεγνωκόν τ. αλήθειαν... ἀδελφοὺς: cf. τούς πιστούς ἀδελφοὺς... ἐπέγνωσε τ. χάριν τ. Θεοῦ ἐν ἀληθείᾳ, i. 2, 6.

iv. 6 καλὸς διάκονος X. I.: cf. πιστὸς διάκονος τ. Χρ., i. 7.

iv. 10 εἰς τοῦτο κοπιώμεν κ. ἀγωνιζόμεθα: cf. εἰς δ' κοπιώ ἀγωνιζόμενοι, i. 29.

vi. 12 εἰς ἥν ἐκλήθης, iii. 15.

vi. 21 ἡ χάρις μεθ' ὦμων, iv. 18.


Titus i. 10 οἱ ἐκ περιφορᾶς, iv. 11.

viii. 1 Thessalonians.

1 Tim. i. 14 πίστεως καὶ ἀγάπης, v. 8.

v. 1 παρακαλεῖ ὡς πατέρα: cf. ὡς πατήρ τέκνα παρακαλοῦντες, ii. 11.

v. 5 νυκτὸς κ. ἡμέρας, iii. 10.

v. 21 καὶ οἱ λοιποί, iv. 13.

2 Tim. i. 3 f. χάριν ἔχω τῷ Θεῷ... ὡς... ἔχω τὴν περὶ σοῦ μνείαν, ἐν τ. δεήσει μου νυκτὸς κ. ἡμέρας ἐπισθοῦν σε ἱδεῖν... ἵνα χαρᾶς πληρωθῇ... τῆς ἐν σοί... πίστεως: cf. εἰχαριστοῦμεν τῷ Θεῷ, i. 2, 13; ὅτι ἔχετε μνείαν ὦμων... ἐπιστοθοῦντες ὦμᾶς ἱδεῖν καθάπερ κ. ἡμεῖς ὦμᾶς... ἐπὶ τάση τ. χαρᾶ ἡ χαίρομεν δι' ὦμᾶς... νυκτὸς κ. ἡμέρας... δεάμενοι εἰς τὸ ἱδεῖν κτλ.... τῆς πίστεως ὦμων, iii. 6, 10.

iv. 18 εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν αὐτοῦ, ii. 12.

Titus ii. 3 πίστε... ἀγάπη... ὑπομονή: cf. i. 3.

ix. 2 Thessalonians.

1 Tim. ii. 12 ἐν ἡσυχίᾳ: cf. iii. 12.

ii. 15 σωθήσεται... ἐν πίστει καὶ ἀγιασμῷ: cf. εἰς σωτηρίαν ἐν ἀγιασμῷ... καὶ πίστει, ii. 13.

vi. 14 μέχρι τ. ἐπιφανείας τ. Κυρίου Ι. Χ.: cf. τ. ἐπιφανείας παρουσίας αὐτοῦ (Κυρίου), ii. 8.

Titus ii. 8 ὅν ο ἐξ ἐναντίας ἐντραπῇ: cf. εἰ δὲ τις οὐκ ὑπακούει τ. λόγῳ ὦμῶν... τοῦτον ὑπεισοδοθε... ἵνα ἐντραπῇ, iii. 14.

x. Philemon.

1 Tim. i. 9 εἰδὼς ὅτι, 21.

iii. 13 τολάμην παρρησίαν ἐν Χριστῷ, 8.

v. 13 ἀμα δὲ καὶ, 22.

v. 2 οἱ (δούλοι) πιστῶς ἐχοντες δεσπότας... ὅτι ἀδελφοὶ εἰσιν, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον δουλευόμενοι, ὅτι πιστοὶ εἰσι καὶ ἀγαπητοί: cf. τ. πίστιν ἦν
APPENDIX II

xi. More than one Pauline Epistle.

1 Tim. i. 1 Παύλος ἀπόστολος X. I., 2 Cor. i. 1; Eph. i. 1; Col. i. 10. 
17 μετὰ ἑπταήν, Rom. xvi. 26; i Cor. vii. 6; 2 Cor. viii. 8.

2 χάρις... εἰρήνην ἀπὸ Θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ X. I. ἐν ἑνίων κ. Κυρίου ἡμῶν: cf. χάρις
καὶ εἰρήνην ἀπὸ Θεοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν κ. Κυρίου I. X., Rom. i. 7; i Cor.
i. 3; 2 Cor. i. 2; Gal. i. 3; Eph. i. 2; Phil. i. 2; Philem. 3.

8 ὦ πόλεμον ἤρων, Rom. xii. 2, iii. 19, viii. 28; 1 Cor. viii. 1, 4; 2 Cor. v. 1.

1 κατὰ ἑπταήν, Gal. ii. 7; δεδοκιμάσθην... πιστεύθη αὐτοῦ ἑαυτόν, i Thess. ii. 4.

12 X. I. τῷ Κυρίῳ ἡμῶν, Rom. vi. 23, viii. 39; i Cor. xv. 31; Eph.
iii. 11; cf. Phil. iii. 8 (μου).

17 δόξα τοῖς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν, Rom. xvi. 27; Gal. i. 5; 2 Phil. iv. 20: cf. Eph. iii. 21.

1 Παρακαλῶ σὺν, Rom. xii. 1; 1 Cor. iv. 16; Eph. iv. 1.

3, v. 4, 21, vi. 13. ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ, Rom. xiv. 22; 1 Cor. i. 29;
2 Cor. iv. 2, vii. 12; Gal. i. 20.

5 εἰς Θεός, Rom. iii. 30; 1 Cor. vii. 6; Gal. iii. 20; Eph. iv. 6.

... ἀνθρώπως X. I.: cf. Rom. v. 15; 1 Cor. viii. 6; 2 Cor. v. 15;
Eph. iv. 5; Gal. iii. 16, 20.

7 οὐ ψεύδομαι, Rom. ix. 1; 2 Cor. xi. 31; Gal. i. 20. ἐν ἄληθείᾳ,
2 Cor. vii. 14; Eph. v. 9, vi. 14; Col. i. 6.

8 ἐν παντὶ τόπῳ, 1 Cor. i. 2; 2 Cor. ii. 14; 1 Thess. i. 8.

15 ἐν ἀγιασμῷ, 1 Thess. iv. 4, 7; 2 Thess. ii. 13.

13 παλιν παρασκευάζω, 2 Cor. iii. 12, vii. 4; Philem. 8.

15 Θεοῦ ζῶντος, Rom. ix. 26: cit. Hos. ii. 1; 2 Cor. iii. 3, vi. 16;
1 Thess. i. 9.

iv. 5 λόγος Θεοῦ, Rom. ix. 6; 1 Cor. xiv. 36; 2 Cor. ii. 17, iv. 2;
Phil. i. 14; Col. i. 25; 1 Thess. ii. 13.

iv. 6 διάκονος Χριστοῦ, 2 Cor. xi. 23; Col. i. 7.

v. 10 (2 Tim. ii. 21, iii. 17; Titus i. 16, iii. 1) τῶν ἐργῶν ἀγαθῶν,
2 Cor. ix. 8; Col. i. 10; 2 Thess. ii. 17; ἐργῶν ἀγαθῶν, Rom. ii. 7,
xiii. 3; Eph. ii. 10; Phil. i. 6.

v. 13 οὐ μόνον δὲ... ἀλλὰ καί, Rom. v. 3; 2 Cor. viii. 19; Eph.
i. 21; Phil. i. 29; 1 Thess. i. 5.
2 Tim. i. Παῦλος ἀπόστολος Χ. Ι. διὰ θελήματος Θεοῦ, 1 Cor. i. 1; 2 Cor. i. 1; Eph. i. 1; Col. i. 1. διὰ θελήματος Θεοῦ, Rom. xv. 32; 2 Cor. viii. 5.  

i. 3 (1 Tim. v. 5) γυνῖς καὶ ἡμέρας, 1 Thess. ii. 9, iii. 10; 2 Thess. iii. 8. ἐπιποθῶν σε (ὑμᾶς) ἰδίων, Rom. i. 11; Phil. ii. 26; 1 Thess. iii. 6.  

i. 8 δύναμις Θεοῦ, Rom. i. 16; 1 Cor. i. 18, 24, ii. 5; 2 Cor. vi. 7, xiii. 3 f. (Eph. i. 19 iii. 7 αἰτοῦ).  

i. 9 κατὰ χάριν τὴν δοθεῖσαν ἡμῖν, Rom. xii. 6; 1 Cor. iii. 10 (μοι): cf. Rom. xii. 3; 1 Cor. i. 4; 2 Cor. viii. 1; Gal. ii. 9; Eph. iii. 2, 7; Col. i. 25. κατὰ πράσεαν, Rom. viii. 28; Eph. i. 11, iii. 11. καλέσαντος κλησεὶ (ἀγία), cf. τ. κλησεὶ ἡ ἐκλήθη, 1 Cor. vii. 20; τ. κλήσεως ἡ ἐκλήθη, Eph. iv. 1.  

i. 10 (Titus i. 3) ... φανερωθείσαν δὲ νῦν: cf. ... φανερωθέντος δὲ νῦν, Rom. xvi. 26; νῦν δὲ ἐφανερώθη, Col. i. 26. διὰ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου, 1 Cor. iv. 15; Eph. iii. 6; 2 Thess. ii. 14.  

iii. 15 εἰς σωτηρίαν (Isa. xlix. 6), Rom. i. 16, x. i, 10; 2 Cor. vii. 10; Phil. i. 19; 2 Thess. ii. 13 (Acts xiii. 47; 1 Pet. i. 5, ii. 2).  

Titus i. Παῦλος δοῦλος, Rom. i. 1; Phil. i. 1: cf. 1 Cor. vii. 22; Gal. i. 10; Col. iv. 12. ἐκλεκτῶν Θεοῦ, Rom. viii. 33; Col. iii. 12. i. 2 ἐπ' ἐλπίδι, Rom. iv. 18, v. 2, viii. 20; 1 Cor. ix. 10.  

i. 10 οἱ ἐκ περιστομῆς, Col. iv. 11; Gal. ii. 12.  

ii. 11 ἡ χάρις τοῦ Θεοῦ, Rom. v. 15; 1 Cor. i. 4, xv. 10; 2 Cor. i. 12; Gal. ii. 21; Eph. iii. 2; Col. i. 6; 2 Thess. i. 12.  

iii. 5 οὐκ ἔχει ἔργων, Rom. iii. 20, xi. 6; Gal. ii. 16; Eph. ii. 9.  

C.  

I PETER AND THE PASTORALS  

i. 1 Tim. i. Παῦλος ἀπόστολος Χ. Ι. κατ' ἐπιταγήν Θεοῦ σωτήρος: cf. Πέτρος ἀπόστολος Ι. Χ. κατά πρόγνωσιν Θεοῦ πατρός, i. 1 f.  

i. 5 τὸ δὲ τέλος ... ἀγάπη ἐκ καθαράς καρδιάς ἀνευδησμός ἀγαθῆς κ. πίστεως ἀνυποκρίτου: cf. τὸ δὲ τέλος ... φιλαδέλφου, iii. 8; εἰς φιλαδελφίαν ἀνυπόκριτου ἐκ καθαράς καρδιάς ἀλλήλους ἀγαπήσατε, i. 22, and i. 9.  

i. 19 ἔχων ... ἀγαθὴν συνειδήσαν, iii. 16, 21.  

ii. 1—3 παρακαλῶ ... ποιεῖτε δεήσεις ... ὑπὲρ βασιλείων κ. πάντων τῶν ἐν ὑπεροχῇ ὠντων ... τούτῳ καλῶν κ. ἀπόδεκτον ἐνώπιον τ. Θεοῦ: cf. παρακαλῶ, ii. 11; ὑποτάσσετε πάσῃ ἀνθρωπίνῃ κτίσει, ... εἰτε βασιλεῖ, ὅς ὑπερέχοντι, εἰτε ἤγεμον, ii. 13; ὥστε αὐτὸς ἐστὶ τὸ θέλημα τ. Θεοῦ, ii. 15.
APPENDIX II

ii. 7 τὸ μαρτύριον . . . εἰς δὲ εἶτεθην ἐγὼ: cf. τῷ λόγῳ . . . εἰς δὲ καὶ εἶτεθησαν, iii. 8 (2 Tim. i. 11).

ii. 9 ὁσαύτως γυναῖκας ἐν καταστολῇ κοσμῶ . . . κοσμεῖν ἑαυτᾶς, μή ἐν πλέγματι κ. χρυσῷ . . . ἣ ἰματισμῷ πολυτελεῖ, ἀλλ' (ὁ πρέπει γυναικεῖν ἐπαγγελλομέναις θεοσθείειν) . . . cf. δρομώς γυναίκες . . . δέν ἐστιν οὐχ ὁ ἐξωθεὶν ἐμπλοκής τριχῶν κ. περιθέσεως χρυσῶν ἢ ἐνδόνεως ἰματιῶν κόσμος, ἀλλ' . . . δέ ἐστιν ἐντύπων τ. Θεοῦ πολυτελές, iii. 3.

ii. 15 εἰς ἄγιασμόν, i. 2.

iii. 2 φιλοῦσον, iv. 9.

iii. 7 δεὶ δὲ κ. μαρτυρίαν καλὴν ἔχειν ἀπὸ τῶν ἐξωθεν, ἡν μή εἰς ἀνειδισμόν . . . , iii. 15 πῶς δεὶ . . . ἀναστρέφεσθαι: cf. τὴν ἀναστροφὴν ὕμων ἐν τ. ἐθνοις ἐχοντες καλὴν, ἡν ἐν ὧ καταλαλοῦσιν ὕμων, ii. 12.

iii. 8 διακόνους . . . μή αἴσχροκερδεῖς: cf. πρεσβυτέρους . . . μηδὲ αἴσχροκερδῶς, v. i f.

iii. 15 εἰς οἴκῳ Θεοῦ, iv. 17.

iii. 16 ἐφανερώθη ἐν σαρκὶ: cf. θανατῳθεῖς μὲν σαρκὶ, iii. 18 f.

εὐδικασθῆ ἐν πνεύματι, ἐξωποιθεῖς δὲ πνεύματι, ἄφθον ἀγγέλους, ὑποταγέντων αὐτῷ ἀγγέλους, ἐκρηκθῆ ἐν ἐθνοις, τοὺς ἐν φυλακῇ πνεύμασι . . . ἐκήρυξέν . . . ἐπιστεύθη ἐν κόσμῳ, eis δὲ πιστεύοντες, ii. 6.

ἀνελήφθη ἐν δόξῃ, ὃς ἐστιν ἐν δείξει τοῦ Θεοῦ κτλ., iii. 22.

iv. 12 μηδές σου . . . καταφρονεῖτο, ἀλλὰ τούτοις γίνου τ. πιστῶν . . . ἐν ἀναστροφῇ . . . ἐν ἀγνείᾳ: cf. μηδὲ ὃς κατακυριεύοντες . . . ἀλλὰ τούτοις γινόμενοι τ. ποιμνίον, v. 3; ἂν οἱ ἐν πάσῃ ἀναστροφῇ γενήθητε, i. 15.

iv. 14 μὴ ἀμέλει τοῦ ἐν σοὶ χαρίσματος: cf. ἕκαστος καθὼς ἔλαβε χάρισμα, iv. 10.

v. 1 πρεσβυτέρῳ . . . παρακάλει ὁ πατέρα, νεωτέρους ὃς ἀδελφοὺς: cf. πρεσβυτέρους . . . παρακαλῶ, v. i ; νεώτεροι, ὑποτάγητε πρεσβυτέροις, v. 5.

v. 5 ὃ δὲ ὄντως χῆρα . . . ἢλπικεν ἐπὶ Θεόν: cf. αἱ ἄγιαι γυναῖκες αἱ ἑλπίζουσα εἰς Θεόν, iii. 5.

v. 14 μηδεμίαν ἀφορμήν διδάσκῃ τῷ ἀντικείμενῳ λοιδορίᾳ χάριν: cf. μῆ ἀποδίδοντες . . . λοιδοριὰν ἀντὶ λοιδορίας, iii. 9.

vi. i δουλου, τοὺς ἰδίους δεσπότας πάσης τιμῆς ἄξιους ἡγεῖσθωσαν: cf. οἱ οἰκεῖται ὑποτασσόμενοι . . . τοὺς δεσπότας, ii. 18.

vi. 12 εἰς ἡν ἐκλήθης: cf. εἰς τὸ οὖν ἐκλήθητε, iii. 19.

vi. 17 f. μη ὅπεροφρονεῖν . . . ἀγαθοεργεῖν: cf. τὴν ταπεινοφροσύνην, v. 5; ἀγαθοτοιοῦντες, ii. 20.

2 Tim. i. i f. Π. ἀπόστολος X. I . . . Θεοῦ πατρός . . . X. I . . . χάρις, ἔλεος, εἰρήνη, . . . X. I. τ. Κύριου ἡμῶν, i. 1. -3.

i. 5 ἀνυπόκριτος, i. 22, i. 6 χάρισμα, iv. 10.
APPENDIX II

i. 12 δι' ἕν αἰτιαν κ. ταῦτα πάσχω ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐπαισχύνομαι, οἶδα γὰρ ὃς πεπίστευκα, κ. πέπεισμαι ὅτι δυνατός ἐστι τ. παραβήκην μον φυλάξαι: cf. μὴ γὰρ τις ὑμῶν πασχέτω ὡς ... κακοποίος ... εἰ δὲ ὡς Χριστιανός, μὴ αἰσχυνέσθω, iv. 15; ὁ πιστεύων ἐπ' αὐτῷ οὗ μὴ καταλαμβάνῃ, ii. 6; ὅστε κ. οἱ πάσχοντες κατὰ τὸ θέλημα τ. Θεοῦ πιστῶ κτίστῃ παρατίθε-σθωσαν τὰς ψυχάς, iv. 19.

ii. 3 ὅσος καλὸς στρατιώτης: cf. ὁς καλὸς οἰκονόμοι, iv. 10.

ii. 8 I. X. ἐγγυγειμένον ἕκ νεκρών: cf. i. 3, 21.

ii. 9 εἶν ὃ κακοπάθω ... ὡς κακούργος ... πάντα ὑπομένω κτλ.: cf. εἰν ψ καταλαλοῦσιν ὑμῶν ὡς κακοποίων, ... εἰ ἀγαθοποιοῦντες κ. πάσχοντες ὑπομείνετε, ii. 12, 20.

ii. 22 ἐκ καρδίας, i. 22.

iii. 15 εἰς συντηρίαν διὰ πίστεως, i. 5.

iv. 1 τοῦ μέλλοντος κρίνεις καὶ νεκροῖς: cf. τῷ ἑτοίμῳ κρίνοντι κρίνεις καὶ νεκροῖς, iv. 5.

Titus i. 1 II. ἀπόστολος I. X. κατὰ πίστιν ἐκλεκτῶν Θεοῦ: cf. Π. ἀπόστολος I. X. ... ἐκλεκτοῖς ... κατὰ πρόγνωσιν Θεοῦ, i. 1.

iii. 5 κατὰ τὸ αὐτοῦ ἔλεος: cf. κατὰ τὸ πολὺ αὐτοῦ ἔλεος, i. 3.

ii. 3 προσβείτως ὡσαύτως ... τὰς νέας ... ὑποτασσομένας τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀνδράσι: cf. ὑμῶν γυναῖκες ὑποτασσόμεναι τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀνδράσι, iii. 1.

D.

I CLEMENT AND THE PASTORALS

i Tim. i. 16 τῶν μελλόντων πιστείν, xlii. 4.

i. 17 τῷ δὲ βασιλεῖ τῶν αἰώνων ... δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν: cf. βασιλεῖ τῶν αἰώνων, lxii. 2 ...; ὃ ἐστω ὡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν, xxxii. 4.

ii. 3 καλὸν καὶ ἀποδεκτόν ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ: cf. καλὸν καὶ πρόσδεκτον ἐνώπιον τοῦ ποιόντας ἰμαῖς, vii. 3.

ii. 6 (vi. 15, Titus i. 3) καροί ἰδίοις, xx. 4, 10.

ii. 7 ἐν πίστει καὶ αληθείᾳ, lx. 4.

ii. 8 βούλομαι οὖν προσευχήσομαι τοὺς ἀνδρὰς ... ἑπαροντας ψιθὺν χείρας: cf. προσέλθωμεν οὖν αὐτῷ ἐν ὑμῶν τοῖς σῷω ψυχῆς, ἀγάς καὶ ἀμαίνος χείρας αἴροντες, xxix. 1.

ii. 9 i. κοσμεῖν ἑαυτὸς ... δι' ἐργον ἄγαθὼν: cf. ἐν ἐργοῖς ἄγαθοίς ... ἐκοσμήθησαν, xxxiii. 7.

v. 17 οἱ καλὸι προσεπτότες προσβιτέροι διπλῆς τιμῆς ἀξιωθωσαν: cf. τιμὴν τὴν καθήκουσαν ἀπονέμοντες τοῖς παρ' ὑμῶν προσβιτέροις, i. 3; ἐνίοις μετεγάγετε καλῶς πολιτευμένους, xliii. 6.

v. 21 μηδὲν ποιῶν κατὰ πρόσκλησιν: cf. μὴ κατὰ προσκλάσεις, xxii. 7, i. 2.
v. 24 f. τινὼν... ἣν τὸ κρίμα προδηλοῖ εἰσὶ, προάγουσαι εἰς κρίσιν: cf. ὁπ. τὸ κρίμα προδηλοῦ ἐγενήθη, li. 3.
vi. 1 ὡς ἑυγόν, xvi. 17.
vi. 7 f. ἔχοντες διατυπώσας κ. σκεπάσματα, τούτως ἀρκεσθησόμεθα: cf. τοὺς ἐφοδίόις τοῦ Θεοῦ ἀρκούμενοι, ii. 2.
2 Tim. i. 3 Θεῷ ὑ ὁλορεῖ... ἐν καθαρᾷ συνειδῆσει: cf. τῶν ἐν καθαρᾷ συνειδῆσε λατρεύων τῷ... ὁνόματι αὐτοῦ, xlv. 7.
ii. 2 ἡ ἄκουσας παρ' ἐμοῦ... ταύτα παράθυρος ἄνθρώπος, οὕτως ἰκανοὶ ἐποντά καὶ ἐπέρωσι διδάσκαι: cf. xliiv. οἱ ἀπόστολοι... κατέστησαν τοὺς προειρημένους, κ. μετεξέ ἐπιμονήν δέδωκασιν ὅπως, εἰς κοιμήθωσιν, διαδέχονται ἐπέρωσι διδοκιμασμένοι ἀνδρεῖς τὴν λειτουργίαν αὐτῶν, xlv. 2; ἐπεμψαμε... ἀνδρας πιστοὺς... οὕτως κ. μάρτυρες ἐσονταί, lxxiii. 3.
ii. 12 ἀρνήσασθαι γὰρ ἐαυτῶν οὐ δύναται, (Titus i. 2 ὁ ἄφεωδης Θεὸς): cf. οἴδαν γὰρ δεδομένα παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ, έι μή το ψεύτασθαι, xxvii. 2.
ii. 22 τὰς νεωτερικὰς ἐπιθυμίας φεύγε: cf. φεύγοντες... μέθας τε κ. νεωτερικοῖς κ. βδελυκτὰς ἐπιθυμίας, xxx. 1.
ii. 31 εἰς πᾶν ἔργων ἀγαθῶν ἤτοιμασμένον: cf. εἰς πᾶν ἔργων ἀγαθῶν ἔτοιμοι, ii. 7.
iii. 15 ff. ἵππο γράμματα: cf. ἵππος γραφάς, liii. 1, xlv. 2 f.
Titus i. 5 ἵνα καταστήσῃς κατὰ πόλιν πρεσβύτερους κτλ.: cf. κατὰ... πάλαις κηρύσσοντες καθίσταν τ. ἀπαρχαίς αὐτῶν, ... εἰς ἐπισκόπους καὶ διακόνους... , xliii. 4.
ii. 5 ἵνα σωφρονίζωται τὰς νέας φιλανδρίας εἶναι, ... σωφρονά, ἀγνάς, οἰκουργοὺς, ὑποτασσομένας τοῦ ἱδίου ἄνθρώπων: cf. γνυαιξ ἐφ' ἐν ἀμώμῳ κ. σεμνῇ κ. ἀρχῇ συνειδῆσαι, ... στεργοῦσας καθηκόντως τοὺς ἄνδρας εαυτῶν ἐν τῷ κανόνι τῆς ὑποταγῆς ὑποσχοῦσα τὰ κατὰ τὸν ὀλίκον σεμνῶς οἰκουργεῖν ἐδιδάσκετε, πάνιν σωφρονούσας, i. 3.
ii. 10 πίστις ἀγαθή, xxvi. 1.
ii. 14 λαὸς περιοίκος, lixiv. 1.
iii. ἵνα πᾶν ἔργων ἀγαθῶν ἔτοιμοι εἶναι, ii. 7; ἀρχαῖς ἐξουσίας ὑποτάσσεσθαι: cf. ἐποτασσόμενοι τοῖς ἦγουμένοις ὑμῶν, i. 3.
iii. 8 καλὰ καὶ ὠφέλιμα, lix. 2.
APPENDIX III

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Special editions and Introductions to the Pastoral.

2. N.T. Introductions and Commentaries

3. Paul and Pauline Epistles

4. Second Imprisonment and Death of Paul


JOURNALS, ETC.


CHURCH HISTORY, ETC.

APPENDIX IV

TEXT OF 1 & 2 TIMOTHY AND TITUS

1. Words which do not occur in the ten Paulines are printed in red

2. 'Hapax Legomena' are marked with an asterisk

3. Words which occur, in Paul, only as part of quotations from the LXX are marked †

4. Pauline phrases are underlined

5. The genuine notes are written in uncials.
ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Α

1 ΠΑΥΛΟΣ ἀπόστολος Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ κατ' ἐπίταγγν 2Cor i.1, Eph i.1, Col i.1
Θεοῦ σωτῆρας ἡμῶν καὶ Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ τῆς ἐλπίδος ἡμῶν Ro xvi.26. Col i.27
2 Τιμοθέω γνησίω τέκνῳ ἐν πίστει χάρις ἔλεος εἰρήνη 1Cor iv.17, Ppi.19,22, Ga 2i.20
ἀπὸ Θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν. Ro i.7 etc., i.4, vi.23 etc.
3 Καθὼς παρεκάλεσα σε προσμενεῖς ἐν Ἑφεσῳ πορευόμενον Ac xviii.18, xx.1. iCor xvi.18
μενος εἰς Μακεδονίαν, ἢν παραγγείλης τισὶ μὴ εἴπεραί- 2Cor i.16 etc.
4 διασκαλεῖν, μηδὲ προσέχειν μῦθοι καὶ ἀνευαλογίας ἀπεράντοις, οἶνοις ἐκπενδύσασθαι μάλλον ἡ οἰκονο-
5 μίαν Θεοῦ τὴν ἐν πίστει,— τὸ δὲ τέλος τῆς παραγγελίας Ga ii.20, Ro vii.22
ἐστὶν ἀγάπη ἐκ καθάρος καρδίας καὶ συνειδήσεως ἁγιός Ro v.5, vi.17
6 καὶ πίστεως ἀνυποκρίτου. ὁν τινες ἀποθηκεύετε ἐξετά-
7 ησαν εἰς ματαιολογίας, θέλοντες εἶναι νομοδιδάσκαλοι Ga iv.21
8 μὴ νοοῦντες μὴ ἀ λέγουσι μὴ περί τιναν *διάβε-
9 βαιοῦνται. οἶδαμεν δὲ ὅτι καλὸς ὁ νόμος εἶναι ἡμῶν Ro iii.19, viii.14,16
*νομίμων χρήται εἰδὼς τοῦτο, ὅτι δικαίων νόμος οὐ κείται, Eph v.5, Phm 21
ἀνόμοιος δὲ καὶ ἄνυποτάκτος, ἀσεβείς καὶ ἀμαρτωλός,
ἀνοσίως καὶ βεβήλως, *πατραλώως καὶ *μητραλώως ἄνδρω-
10 φάνοις, πόρνοις, ἀροφυκοῦσι, *ἀνδραποσι, ψεύτοις,
*ἐπισκόποις, καὶ εἰ πέτερον τῇ ὑγιαινόσῃ διδασκαλίᾳ ἀντί- Ro xiii.9
11 κείται, κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τῆς δόξης τοῦ μακαρίου Θεοῦ Ro ii 16, xvi.25, i.1, 2Cor iv.4
12 ἐν ἑπιστεύθην ἐγώ. Ἡ χαίρεν ἐχω τῷ ἐνδυναμώσμι- Ga ii.7 Pr iv.13
σαντι με Χριστὸν Ἰησοῦ τῷ Κυρίῳ ἡμῶν, ὅτι πιστὸν με Ro vi.23, Ephii.11, iCorvii.25
13 ήγήσεται, δεμενος εἰς διακονίαν, τὸ πρότερον ὅταν πλασα- 2Cor v.19, iCorxvi.15, Gaiv.13
φημον καὶ *διάκονην καὶ ὑβριστὴν ἀλλ' ἠλεύθην ὅτι ἄγων Ga i.13, iCor xv.9, 2Cor i.1
14 ἐποίησα ἐν ἁπαστίᾳ, *ὑπερεπλεόνασε δὴ ἡ χάρις τοῦ Κυ- Ro v.20, i.16,20, Ro iv.15
ρίου ἡμῶν μετὰ πίστεως καὶ ἀγάπης τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ. Eph vi.23, Thv.8, Roii.39
15 πιστός ὁ λόγος καὶ πάσης ἀποθηκεύσθαι, ὅτι Χριστὸς 2Cor i.18, 1Cor xv.3
Ἰησοῦς ἠλθεν εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἀμαρτωλοὺς σώσαι ἃν Ro v.8,12
16 πρῶτος εἰμι ἐγώ. ἀλλὰ διὰ τοῦτο ἠλεύθην ἰνα ἐν ἐμοὶ Ro xv.9, Roiv.16, Ephii.4,7
πρῶτος ἐνδείκται Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς τὴν ἀπασαν μακροῦθε- Ro ix.82
17 εἰς ζωήν αἰωνίων. τῷ δὲ βασιλεί τῶν αἰώνων, ἀφθάρτω Ro v.21, i.23, 20, xvi.25,27
*ἐνδυναμωθη
I. 17-III 5 ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Α

Ro ii.7. Ga i.5, Pp iv.20
1 Cor iv.17
2 Cor x.3f
Ro xiv.22, 1 Cor xiii. 2
† Ro xi. 1f cit. Ps xciv.14
1 Cor v.5

Ro xiii.1, Cor iv.16, Eph iv.1, Pp 4
Ro i.8, Eph v.20
1 Cor vii.26, 2 Cor vii.18, viii.21
Ro iii.30, vii.15, 1 Cor viii.6
Ga iii.19f
Ga i.4, ii.20
Ga vi.9
Ro ix.1, xi.19 Ga li.20
(ἄλληδειαι λέγω, οὐ ψευδόμαι), διδάσκαλός ἐθνῶν ἐν πιστεὶ καὶ ἄλληδεια. Βουλόμαι οὖν προσευχήσασθαι τοὺς 8 ἀνδρας ἐν παντὶ τόπῳ, ἐπαίροντας δόσιμον κείρος χωρὶς ὀργῆς καὶ διαλογισμοῦ. ὁ σωτῆρ πουναίκος ἐν *καταστολῇ *κοσμίῳ μετὰ *σιδών καὶ σωφροσύνῃ κομήν ἐστάσας, μὴ ἐν *πλέγμασι καὶ χρωσία ἡ μαργάριτας ἡ ἰματισμῷ πολυτελεῖ, ἀλλὰ ὁ πρέπει γυναῖκι ἐπαγγελλομέναι *θεοσέβειαν, δι’ ἐργῶν ἀγαθῶν. γυνὴ ἐν ἱσχία μακαρισμῶν ἐν πάσῃ ὑποταγῇ. διδάσκαλοι δὲ γυναικὶ οὐκ ἐπιτρέπω, οὔτε ἐν *αιθεντέοι ἄνδρος, ἀλλὰ ἐν ἱσχίᾳ. Ἀδὰμ γὰρ πρῶτος ἐπίλαθη, ἐτὰ Ἐδαμ. ἔτει, Ἀδὰμ ἡ ἑτήθη, ἢ ὑπὲρ ἐκπαθηθείσα ἐν παραβασίῃ γεγονεν' σωθήσεται δὲ διὰ τῆς *τελείωσης, ἐὰν μείνωσιν ἐν πιστεὶ καὶ ἀγάπῃ καὶ ἀγίασμον μετὰ σωφροσύνης. πιστὸς ὁ λόγος.

Εἰ τις ἐπισκοπὴς ὀρέγεται, καλῶ προτὸς μου ἐπιθυμεῖ. δεῖ οὖν τὸν ἐπὶ σκοπὸν ἀνεπιλήπτων ἐναι, 2 μίας γυναικὸς ἄνδρα, *νηφάλιον, *σωφρόνα, *κόμμον, φιλόξενον, *διδακτικὸν. μὴ *πάροιδον, μὴ *πλήκτην, ἀλλὰ ἐπισκόπῳ, 3 *συμμάχον, ἀφιλάργυρον. τοῦ ἱδίου οἴκου καλῶς προϊστάμενος, 4 τεκνὰ ἔχοντα ἐν ὑποταγῇ μετὰ πάσης *σεμνότητας; (Εἰ δὲ 5 ἡ σφυροκοπημάτων Ἡμῶν W.H.)
ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΩΝ Α
III-VI A

τις τοῦ ἴδιον οἴκου προστήναι οὐκ ὤδε, πῶς ἐκκλησίας 1Cor xi.22 etc.
6 Θεοῦ ἐπιμεληθοῦσαί μη ἐνεόφυτον ἵνα μὴ τις εἰς
7 κρίμα ἐμπέσῃ τοῦ διαβόλου. δεῖ δὲ καὶ ἀρτυριάν καλὴν ἔχειν ἀπὸ τῶν ἐξωθη, ἵνα μὴ εἰς ὑπενιδισμὸν ἐμπέσῃ καὶ
8 παγίδα τοῦ διαβόλου. διακόνους ὡσαίτως σεμνοῦμη
*διόλους, μὴ οἷον πολλῷ προσέχοντας, μὴ ἀἰσχροκερδεῖς,
9 ἐχόντας τὸ μυστήριον τῆς πίστεως ἐν καθαρᾷ συνείδησις.
10 καὶ οὗτοι δὲ δοκιμαζότας πρῶτον, ἐίτα διακονεῖται 1Cor xvi.9, 2Cor viii.22
11 ἀνέγκλητοι ὑπεράν. γυναίκας ὡσαίτως σεμνᾶς, μὴ ἀρβό-
12 λους, νηφαλίους, πιστὰς ἐν πάσι. διάκονοι οὖσιν τῶν ἡμῶν ἐστωσαν μᾶς γυναικικὸς ἄνδρες, τέκνων καλῶς προστάμενοι καὶ τῶν ἰδίων οἴκων. οἱ γὰρ καλῶς διακονήσαντες βαθμὸν ἐστοις καλὸν πεποιηθοῦν ταῖς ἐπολλοὶ παρρησίαν ἐν πίστει τῇ
14 ἐν Χριστῷ Ιησοῦ. Ταύτα σοι γράφω ἐλπί-
15 ζων ἐλθεῖν πρὸς σε ἐν τάχει ἐὰν δὲ βραδύνω, ἵνα εἰδῆς
16 θεοῦ ζωντος, στῦλος καὶ ἐδραίωμα τῆς ἀληθείας καὶ
*ομολογομένων μέγα ἐστὶ τὸ τῆς εὐσεβείας μυστήριον
17 ὅσο εὐανερώθη ἐν σαρκί,
ἐδικαἰωθῇ ἐν πνεύματι,
18 ὠφθαλμοὶ ἀγγέλωις,
ἐκπρόσθη ἐν ἐθνεῖς,
ἐπιστεῦθη ἐν κόσμῳ,
ἀνελήφθη ἐν δόξῃ.

IV 1 Τὸ δὲ Πνεῦμα ἔρθει, ὡς ὁ ὑπότερος καιρός
2 ἀποστήσαται τινες τῆς πίστεως, προσέχοντες πνεύματι
3 πλάνους καὶ διδασκαλίας δαιμονίων, ἐν ὑποκρίσει *ψευδο-
4 χριστίας
5 λόγων, *κοινωνισμένων τὴν ἴδιαν συνείδησιν, καλω-
6 στῶν γαμεῖν, ἀπέχεσθαι βραβιότατον, ἡ ὁ Θεὸς ἔκτισεν εἰς
7 μετάληψιν μετὰ εὐχαριστίας τοῖς πιστοῖς καὶ ἐπεγνωκὸι
8 δι' ἐν ἐκκλησίαν. ὅτι πάν κίσμα Θεοῦ καλὸν, καὶ οὐδὲν ὄνο-
9 βλήτον, μετὰ εὐχαριστίας λαμβανόμενον. ἀγαίνεται γὰρ
10 χριστίας
11 διὰ λόγου Θεοῦ καὶ ἐνεπεκτείνεσθαι. Ταύτα ὑποσχεῖτε- Ro ix.6 etc. 1Pet. i.23
12 νὸς τοὺς ἄδελφοὺς καλὸς ἐσθὶ διάκονος Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ. Col. i.7
*ἐνεπεκτείνεσθαι τοὺς λόγους τῆς πίστεως καὶ τῆς καλῆς δια-
13 σκαλίας ἢ παρηκολούθηκας τοὺς δὲ βεβηλοῦσας καὶ ἐνεπε-
14 κατὰ μύθους παρατεῖναι. γυμναζὼ δὲ σεαυτῶν πρὸς εὐσεβεῖαν
15 ἡ γὰρ σωματικῇ *γυμνασίᾳ πρὸς ὄλιγον ἐστὶν *φύλος μοι.
Ν8-Ν15 ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Α

hydrateia prois pantaré*óphelimos éstin, épaggelían
éxousa zôihs tis vûn kai tis melosous. pistoros ò logos 9
kai párrhs*ápodochis aígeis. eis touto ýar koiwmén 10
diýonizómevas, óti hlipíamen epi Thêw zonì, òs
èost swtíh pantan ántherósw, málistra pístan.

parággelle taúta kai dídasse. mhrdeeis sou tis neô-
titos katafro caravanìa, alá típous gînou twn pístwv en
lógo, en ánastrophê, en ágya, en pîstei, en*ágei éwv 11
érchomai, próske tì anakwnwsì, tì paraklítì, tì dídask-
balìa. mì åméleì tou en soi xarísmatos, ò êdóthi sou 14
dia proftetías metà építhésews twn xeirwn tîn prōs-
theri. taúta meléta, én toutoús ísbei, ína sou ò pro-
kôn favan và pásin. ènpeche seautò kai tì dídaskalìa 16
épîmene autoìs. touto ýar poîw kai seauton swseis kai
tous åkouýntas sou.

Пресвятый ми*епиплéйсі, аллá паракálei òs пнæ-
тера, нейтёролоус òс ádelphoi, пресвятéрос òс мhтéras, 2
нейтёролоус òс адельфас ен пáс*ágneia. χhрας тiма тâс 3
óntow χhрας. еi дe тiς χhρα тéкнa 4*ékgoua exei, mánthâ-
vétwsan prós tòn ùdian òikôn eusèbeían, kai*ámoibás apo-
didónav toìs*progyónoi. touto ýar èstín*anádekontenómpion
tou òcchá. 4 ò de óntow χhρα kai*ménonoméné hlipíken èpì 5
Òcchá, kai prósmevei taìs deîsosai kai taìs pòséuxai
nuktòs kai hmeras. ò de spatalóska zôsa têvniks. 6
kai taúta parággelle, ìna*ánepínlhptoi ãswin. eî de tis 7
tòn ùdian kai málistra òikéwv ou prôvov, tîn pístîn
þrntai kai èstinan âpístou xeirwn. χhρα*kataleugéthw 9
mì*èlattow ètòw èkhnontà geugouvía, ònôs ándrovs gnu,
èn èrgoìs kaloiôs márturouménâ, èi*èteknôtrôfhsen, èi 10
*èxevndôkhsen, èi âgînès ënìsvei, èi bìbimenois
*èpírkeisen, èi pànti èrgw ãghadù èpíkoloûthse. nêswtê-
ras de χhρas paraitou. òtan ýar*katástrophiâsou toû
xristou, gàmein bêlousin, èkhouai krîma òti tîn prôthi 12
pîstîn èsthhsan. èmà de kai árgai màndánonoi, peri- 13
erxómenvai tòs òikias, ou mònôn de árgai, ìlla kai*phlûros
kai pèrérégoi, lýmousa tî mi dênta. 14

Boûlômee ouû 14
nêswtérâs gàmein,*têknoyovnein,*oikôdêpsestói mhrdei-
àforoùn didónav tòs ántikèmênu lóidôrias xhîn. òde ýar 15
ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Α

16 τινες ἑξετάσατεν ὅπισώ τοῦ Σατανᾶ, εἰ τις πιστῇ ἔχει χήρας, ἐπαρκείτω αὐταῖς, καὶ μὴ βαρείσθω ἡ ἐκκλησία. ἤνα ταῖς ὄντως χήρας ἐπαρκείσθη. Οἱ καλῶς προσβάτωσεν πρεσβύτεροι διπλῆς τιμῆς ἀξιούσθωσαν, μᾶλλον οἱ κοινώτες ἐν λόγῳ καὶ διδασκαλίᾳ. λέγει γὰρ ἡ γραφή, Βοῦν ἄλαοντα γὰρ φιλόσωφος καὶ Ἀξιός ὁ ἐργατὴς 1 Cor ix.9 cit. Deut. xxv.4

19 τοῦ μισθοῦ αὐτοῦ, κατὰ πρεσβύτερον κατηγορίαν Lk x.7

20 τοὺς ἀμαρτάνοντας ἐνώπιον πάντων ἔλεγχε, ἵνα καὶ οἱ μὴ παραδέχατος εἰς Μὴ ἐπὶ ΔΥΟ Η ΤΡΙΩΝ ΜΑΡΤΥΡΩΝ: 1 Corixiv5, xv3. 2 Corxiii.1 cit. Deut. xix.15

21 λοιποί φόβον ἔχοντο. διαμαρτύρομαι ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ Χριστοῦ ᾿Ησοῦ καὶ τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν ἄγγελων, ἵνα ταῦτα φυλάξῃς χωρίς *προκρίματος μηδὲν ποιῶν κατὰ *πρόσ-κλισιν. 2 Corvii.12

22 χείρας τάχεως μηδὲν ἐπιτίθει, μηδὲ κοινώνει 2 Th iv.13

23 ἀμαρτίας ἀλλοτρίας· σεαυτόν ἄγνων τῆρει. μηκέτι *ὑδρο-νότει, ἀλλ' ἄνω όλίγω χρῶ διὰ τὸν *στόμαχον καὶ τὰς πυκνάς σου ἀσθενείας. τινῶν ἀνθρώπων αἱ ἀμαρτίαι πρόδηλοί εἰσι, προάγουσα εἰς κρίσιν, τισὶ δὲ καὶ ἑπακολουθοῦσιν. ὡσαύτως καὶ τὰ ἔργα τὰ καλὰ πρόδηλα, καὶ τὰ *ἀλλόως ἔχοντα κρυφεῖν οὐ δύναται.

VI 1 ὁσοὶ εἰσίν ὑπὸ ζυγὸν δούλως τοὺς ἰδίους δεσπότας πάσης τι-μῆς ἄξιος ἤγείρθοσαν, ἵνα μὴ τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ ἡ δι- σακαλία βλασφημήται. οἱ δὲ πιστοὶ ἔχοντες δεσπότας μὴ καταφρονεῖται, ὥστε ἀδελφοὶ εἰς ἀλλὰ μάλλον. Phm 16 δουλεύονται, ὅτι πιστοὶ εἰσὶ καὶ ἀγαπητοὶ οἱ τῆς εὐερ-γεσίας ἀντιλαμβανόμενοι.

3 Ταύτα διδάσκετε καὶ παρακάλετε. εἰ τις *ἐτεροδιδασκαλεῖ, καὶ μὴ προσέρχεται δυγιάνουσι λόγοις, τοῖς τοῦ Κυρίου Ro vi.1 etc. ἡμᾶς ᾿Ησοῦ Χριστοῦ, καὶ τῇ κατ’ εὐσέβειαν διδασκαλίᾳ,

4 *τετύφασατο, μηδὲν ἐπιστάμενος, ἀλλὰ *νοσῶν ἐν ἱηθείς καὶ *λογομαχίας, εἴτε ἄν γίνεται φθόνος, ἔρις, βλασφημίαι, Ro i.18.28f *ὑπονοίαν πονηρὰ, *διαπαρατριβαί διεδραμένων ἀνθρώπων τῶν νοῶν καὶ ἀπεστερημένων τῆς ἁλθείας, νομιζόντων *πο-ρισμῶν εἶναι τὴν εὐσέβειαν. ἔστι δὲ *πορισμὸς μέγας ἢ 7 εὐσέβεια μετὰ αὐταρκείας· οὔδὲ γὰρ ἐσπεννέκαμεν εἰς τὸν Ro ν.12 κόσμον, ὃτι οὕδε ἐξενεγείκειν τι δυνάμεθα· ἔχοντες δὲ *δια- τροφὰς καὶ *σκεπάσματα τούτως ἀρκεσθησόμεθα. οἱ δὲ τουλάχιστον πλούτων ἐμπίπτουσιν εἰς πειρασμὸν καὶ ἱνα- γίδα καὶ ἐπιθυμίας πολλὰς ἀνοήτως καὶ *βλαβερὰς, αὐτίνες
VI 9-21 ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Α

βουθίζουσι τοὺς άνθρώπους εἰς ολέθρην καὶ ἀπώλειαν. ρίζα 10
gὰρ πάντων τῶν κακῶν ἔστιν ἡ *φιλαργυρία*· ἡ τινες ὀρε-
gόμενοι ἀπεπλανήθησαν ἀπὸ τῆς πίστεως, καὶ έαυτοῖς
*περιέπειραν δύνας πολλαίς.* Σὺ δέ, ὥς ἄν- 11
θρούνε Θεοῦ, ταῦτα φεύγε· δίωκε δὲ δικαιοσύνην, εὐσέ-
βειαν, πίστιν, ἀγάπην, ὑπομονήν, *πραυπάθειαν, ἀγωνίαν 12
τὸν καλὸν ἄγανα τῆς πίστεως, ἐπιλαβοῦντες αἰώνιου ζωῆς,
eἰς ἡν ἐκλήθης, καὶ ὁμολογήσατο τὴν καλὴν ὁμολογίαν ἐνώ-
pιον πολλῶν μαρτύρων. παραγγέλλω σας ἐνώπιον τοῦ 13
Θεοῦ τοῦ ζωογόνοντος τὰ πάντα καὶ Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ
μαρτυρήσαντος ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου τὴν καλὴν ὁμολογίαν,
tηρήσατε σε τὴν ἑντολήν ἄσπιλον, *ἄνεπιληπτὸν, μέχρι 14
τῆς ἐπιφανείας τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· ἢν καὶ-
ροις ἴδιοις δείξει ὁ μακάριος καὶ μόνος δυνάστης, ὁ βασι-
λεὺς τῶν βασιλεύσων καὶ κύριος τῶν κυριεύσων, ὁ 16
μόνος ἣκων ἀδανασίαν, φῶς οἰκῶν ἀνήριστον, ὁν εἶδεν οὐ-
deis άνθρώπων οὐδὲ ἴδειν δυνάται, ὁ τιμὴ καὶ κράτος
αἰώνιον· ἄμην.

Τοῖς πλουσίοις ἐν τῷ νῦν αἰῶνι παράγγελλε μη *ὑψη- 17
λοφρονεῖν· μηδὲ ἡλικιέναι ἐπὶ πλοῦτον *ἀδηλότητι, ἀλλ’
ἐπὶ Θεῷ τῷ παρέχοντι ἡμῖν πάντα πλουσίως εἰς ἀπόλα-
σιν· ἀγαθοδερεῖν, πλούτειν ἐν ἔργαις καλοῖς, *ἐμιτράδο- 18
τοὺς ἐδαι, *κοινωνικοῖς, *ἀποθευσμαρίζοντας ἐαυτοῖς 19
θεμέλιον καλὸν εἰς τὸ μέλλον, ἵνα ἐπιλάβωσαι τῆς ὁν-
tως ζωῆς.

*Ω Τιμόθεε, τὴν *παραθήκην φύλαξον, ἐκτρεπόμενος 20
tὰς βεβήλους *κενοφοβίας καὶ *ἀντιθέσεις τῆς *ψευδω-
νύμου γνώσεως, ἢν τινες ἐπαγγελλόμενοι περὶ τὴν πίσ- 21
τιν *ηστόχησαν.

*Ἡ χάρις μεθ’ ὑμῶν.
ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Β

1 ΠΑΥΛΟΣ ΑΠΟΣΤΟΛΟΣ ΧΡΙΣΤΟΥ ΙΗΣΟΥ ΥΙΟΥ ΔΙΑ ΘΕΛΗΜΑ

2 τος Θεού κατ' ἐπαγγελίαν ζωής τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ Τίμω

3 ΘΕΟΙ ΑΓΑΠΗΤΟΙ τέκνων, ΧΑΡΙΣ ΕΛΕΟΣ, ΕΙΡΗΝΗ ἀπὸ ΘΕΟΥ

4 ΠΑΤΡΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΥΡΙΟΥ ΙΗΣΟΥ ΧΡΙΣΤΟΥ.

5 Χάριν ἔχω τῷ Θεῷ, ὃς λατρεῖς ἂν ἄργῳ ἐν κα-

6 θαρά συνειδήσητε, ὅτι ἀδιάλειπτον ἔχω τὴν περὶ σοῦ μνείαν

7 ἐν ταῖς δέησεις ὑμῶν, νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας ἐπισωσθῶν σε ἱδεῖν,

8 μεμνημένος σοι τῶν δακρύων, ἵνα χαρᾶς πληρωθῇ ἡ ὑπομνή-

9 σιν λαβὼν τῆς ἐν σοὶ ἀνυποκρίτου πίστεως, ἡτίς ἐνφίκεσε

10 πρῶτον ἐν τῇ *μάμῃ σου Λυκίδι καὶ τῇ μητρί σου Εὐνακή,

11 πένεισαι δε ὅτι καὶ ἐν σοί. δι' ἂν αἰτίαν ἀναμνησθώ

12 σε *ἀναζωρεῖν τὸ γάρισμα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὃ ἐστίν ἐν σοὶ διὰ

13 τῆς ἐπιθέσεως τῶν χειρῶν μου. μὴ γὰρ ἔδωκέν ἡμῖν ἁθος

14 πνεύμα *δηλιγία, ἀλλὰ δυνάμεως καὶ ἀγάπης καὶ *σωφρο-

15 νισμοί, μὴ ὅπερ ἐπασυνόδευτο τὸ μαρτύριον τοῦ Κυρίου

16 ἡμῶν, μηδὲ ἔμε τὸν δήσιμον αὐτοῦ. ἀλλὰ *συγκακόπαθον

17 τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ κατὰ δύναμιν Θεοῦ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμᾶς καὶ

18 καλέσαντος κλῆσει ἀγία, ὥσ τα δὲ ἔργα ἡμῶν, ἀλλὰ κατ

19 ιδίαν πρόβοσιν καὶ χάριν τὴν δοθείαν ἡμῖν ἐν Χριστῷ

20 Ἰησοῦ πρὸ χρόνων αἰωνίων φανερωθήσαν δὲ πᾶσιν διὰ τῆς

21 ἐπιφάνειας τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ, καταργή-

22 σαντος μὲν τὸν θάνατον φατισάντων δὲ ζωὴν καὶ ἀφθαρ-

23 σίαν διὰ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου, εἰς ὅ ἐστάθη ἐγὼ κήρυξ καὶ ἀπό-

24 στολος καὶ διδάσκαλος. τι ἂν αἰτίαν καὶ ταῦτα πάσχω

25 ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐπασυνόδευα, οἶδα γὰρ ὅ πεπιστευκα, καὶ ἐπ

26 πεισμα ὅτι δυνατός ἐστι τὴν *παραθήκην μου φυλάξαι

27 εἰς ἐκείνην τὴν ἡμέραν. ἄυποτύπωσιν ἔχεν υἱοκτονών

28 λόγων, ὃν παρ' ἐμοί ἠκούσας, ἐν πίστει καὶ ἀγάπῃ τῇ ἐν

29 Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ. τὴν καλὴν *παραθήκην φύλαξον διὰ

30 Πνεύματος Αγίου τοῦ ἐνοικοῦντος ἐν ἡμῖν. οἶδας

31 τοῦτο, ὅτι ἄπεστραφθάναν μὲ πάντες οἱ ἐν τῇ Ἀσίᾳ. δὲν

32 ἐστὶν Φύλεκας καὶ Ἐρμογένης.

33 ΔΩΛΗ ΕΛΕΟΣ Ο ΚΥΡΙΟΣ ΤΟΥ ὌΝΗΣΙΦΟΡΟΥ ΟΙΚΩΤΙ ΟΤΙ

34 ΠΟΛΛΑΚΙΣ ΜΕ ΑΝΕΨΥΧΕΣ ΚΑΙ ΤΗΝ ΑΛΥΣΙΝ ΜΟΥ ΟΥΚ

35 ΕΠΗΘΕΙΝΑΙ, ΑΛΛΑ ΓΕΝΟΜΕΝΟΣ ΕΝ ΡΩΜΗ ΣΠΟΥΔΑΙΩΣ

36 ΕΞΗΤΗΣΕ ΜΕ ΚΑΙ ΕΥΡΕ (ΔΩΛΗ ΑΥΤΩΙ Ο ΚΥΡΙΟΣ ΕΥΡΕΙ

37 ΕΛΕΟΣ ΠΑΡΑ ΚΥΡΙΟΥ ΕΝ ΕΚΕΙΝΗ ΤΗ ΗΜΕΡΑΙ) ΚΑΙ ΟΣΑ ΕΝ

38 ΕΦΕΣΙΟΙ ΔΙΝΚΟΝΗΣΕ, *ΒΕΛΤΙΩΝ ΣΥ ΓΙΝΩΣΚΕΙΣ.

39 εὐ οὐν, τέκνων μου, ἐνυπναμοῦ ἐν τῇ χάριτι τῇ ἐν...

a. so W.H.m.
Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ, καὶ ἡ ἱκουσίας ἄμα ἐμοῦ διὰ πολλῶν μαρτύρων, ταῦτα παράθων πιστοὺς ἀνθρώπους, οἵτινες ἵκονοι ἔσονται καὶ ἔτερους διδάσκω. Μην γὰρ πάντως ἔτερον ἀνθρώπων ἢ τοιοῦτον ἄνθρωπον ἐκ τούτων ἐπισκεφθῆτε. Παρά τις δεικτικών διδασκαλίων ἐν παρακαλώ μεγάλα δεικτικά ἐπισκεφθῆτε, τὸν κοιμῶντα και τὸν ἀνασκαφέντα. Παρά τις δεικτικών διδασκαλίων ἐν παρακαλώ μεγάλα δεικτικά ἐπισκεφθῆτε, τὸν κοιμῶντα και τὸν ἀνασκαφέντα. Παρά τις δεικτικών διδασκαλίων ἐν παρακαλώ μεγάλα δεικτικά ἐπισκεφθῆτε, τὸν κοιμῶντα και τὸν ἀνασκαφέντα. Παρά τις δεικτικών διδασκαλίων ἐν παρακαλώ μεγάλα δεικτικά ἐπισκεφθῆτε, τὸν κοιμῶντα και τὸν ἀνασκαφέντα.
ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Β

πίστιν, ἀγάπην, εἰρήνην, μετὰ τῶν ἐπικαλομένων τὸν Κύριον εἰς καθαρὰς καρδίας. τὰς δὲ μωρὰς καὶ ἀπουδεύτους ζητήσεις παρατείνει, εἰδὼς ὅτι γεννᾶται μάχας. 1Cor xiv.1, i.2

δούλον δὲ Κυρίου οὐ δεί μάχεσθαι, ἀλλὰ ἐνίοτεν εἰναι. 1 Cor vii.22

πρὸς πάντας, διδακτικῶν, ἀνεβίκακον, ἐν πραότητι παιδεύουσαν τοὺς ἀντιδιατιθεμένους, μήποτε δίω

αὐτοὶ ο Ἡθεὸς μετάνοιαν εἰς ἐπίγνωσιν ἀληθείας, καὶ ἀνανήμωσαν ἐκ τῆς τοῦ διαβόλου παγίδος ἐξωρηματικά. Ῥοι.9 κιτ Ps ix.x.23 μένοι ὑπὸ αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸ ἑκείνου θέλημα.

Τοῦτο δὲ γίνωσκε, ὅτι ἐν ἑσχάταις ἡμέραις ἐνστή- Ροι.6. Is ii.2

συντελεῖ καὶ προφατοὶ χαλεποὶ. ἔστων γὰρ οἱ ἀνθρώποι· φίλαι τοίς, πιλάργυροι, ἀλαζόνες, ὑπερήφανοι, βλάσφημοι, γονεῖς. Ῥοι.30j

σύν ἀπειθεῖς, ἀχάριτοι, ἀνόσιοι, ἀστόργοι, ἀσπονδοί, διαβόλοι, ἀκρατεῖς, ἀνήμεροι, ἀφιλάγαθοι, προδόται, προ- πετεῖς, τετυφωμένοι, φιλήδονοι μᾶλλον ἢ φιλόθεοι,

ἐχοντες μόρφωσιν εὐσεβείας τὴν δὲ δύναμιν αὐτῆς ἤρνη- Ροι.ii.20

μένοι· καὶ τούτοις ἀποτρέπουν. ἐκ τούτων γὰρ ἔστων οἱ ἐνδυνάμωντοι εἰς τὰς οἰκίας καὶ αἱμαλατίζοντες γυναικάρια. Ῥοκ.20 κιτ.Prov.xxv.22

ποικίλαις, παντὸς μακανθάνουν καὶ μηδέποτε εἰς ἐπί-

γνωσιν ἀληθείας ἐλθεῖν δυνάμειν. ὁν τρόπον δὲ Ἰαννης καὶ ἱαμβρῆς ἀντέστησαν Μωύσει, αὐτῶς καὶ αὐτοὶ ἀνθ- στανταί τῇ ἀληθείᾳ, ἀνθρωποὶ κατεφθαρμένοι τὸν νου. Ῥοι.28

ἀδόκιμοι περί τὴν πίστιν. ἀλλ’ οὐ προκόψουσιν ἐπὶ πλείον.

ἡ γὰρ ἀνοία αὐτῶν· ἐκδηλοθές ἐσται πάσιν, ὡς καὶ ἡ ἑκεί-

νανῶν ἐγένετο.

Sigma πορηκολούθησας ΜΟΥ Μὴ ΔΙΔΑΣΚΑΛΙΑΙ, ΜΗ ΑΓΩΓΗΙ, ΜΗ ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΙ, ΜΗ ΠΙΣΤΕΙ, ΜΗ ΜΑΚΡΟΘΥΜΙΑΙ, ΜΗ 2Cor vi.4-7

ἈΓΑΠΗΙ, ΜΗ ΥΠΟΜΩΝΙΟΙ, ΤΟΙΣ ΔΙΩΓΜΟΙΣ, ΤΟΙΣ ΠΑΘΗΜΑΤΙΝΟΙΜΟΙ ΜΟΙ ΕΓΕΝΕΤΟ ἐν ἈΝΤΙΟΧΕΙΑΙ, ἐΝ ΙΚΟΝΙΩΙ, ἐΝ ΛΥΣΤΡΟΙΣ, ΟΙΟΥΣ ΔΙΩΓΜΟΙ ΜΟΥΣ ΥΠΗΝΕΓΚΑ, ΚΑΙ ΕΚ ΠΑΝΤΩΝ ΕΡΡΥΣΑΤΟ Ο ΚΥΡΙΟΣ. 2Cor i.10

καὶ πάντες δὲ οἱ θέλοντες· εὐσεβῶς ζην ἐν Χριστῷ Ησυχοὶ. Ῥος.iii.29 etc

διαψεύδοντας, ποινῇς δὲ ἀνθρώποι καὶ γόνης προκόψου-

σιν ἐπὶ τὸ χείρον, πλανώντες καὶ πλανάμενοι, ὅπερ βρέφους ἱερὰ γράμματα ὁδοὺς τὰ δυνάμεια σε σοφί-

σαι εἰς αὐτοῖς διὰ πίστεως τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ Ησυχοί, πάσοις 2Th iii.2 1Pe i.5, Ῥοi.16,iii.22, viii.39

γραφὴ *θεόπνευστος καὶ ἀφελέμος πρὸς διδακτικάν πρὸς Ῥοι. iv.4
**ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Β**

*Ελεγκτος, πρὸς ἑπανὸρθωσιν, πρὸς παιδείαν τὴν ἐν δικαίωσι 17

νῆ ἵνα ἀρμίοι ὁ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἀνθρώπως, πρὸς πάν ἐργον

ἀγαθὸν ἐξηρτισμένον.

**ΔΙΑΜΑΡΤΥΡΟΜΑΙ ΕΝΩΠΙΟΝ ΤΟΥ ΘΕΟΥ ΚΑΙ ΧΡΙΣΤΟΥ 1 ΙΒ**

ἸΗΣΟΥ ΤΟΥ ΜΕΛΛΟΝΤΟΣ ΚΡΙΝΕΙΝ ΖΩΝΤΑΣ ΚΑΙ ΝΕΚΡΟΥΣ-

ΚΑΙ ΤΗΝ ΕΠΙΦΑΝΕΙΑΝ ΑΥΤΟΥ ΚΑΙ ΤΗΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΕΙΑΝ ΑΥΤΟΥ-

ΚΗΡΥΞΕΝ ΤΟΝ ΛΟΓΟΝ, ΕΠΙΣΤΗΘΙ ΕΥΚΑΙΡΩΣ *ΑΚΑΙΡΩΣ, 2

*ἐλέγχον, ἐπιτίμησον, παρακάλεσον, ἐν πάσῃ μακροθυμίᾳ

καὶ διδαχῇ.

Ἔσται γὰρ οἱ καρδίς ὅτε τῆς ὑγιεινούσης διδασκαλίας οὐκ

ἀνέχονται, ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὰς ἐπιθυμίας τὰς ἰδίας ἐστοι

*ἐπισωφεύσου διδασκάλους ἑνηθόμενοι τὴν ἀκοήν, καὶ

ἀπὸ μὲν τῆς ἀληθείας τὴν ἀκοήν τάσοφρέσσουν, ἐπὶ δὲ

τους μίθους ἐκτραπήσουνται.

**Eph iv.22**

*ἐγγελιστοῦ, τὴν διακονίαν σου ἢ πληροφόρησον. εἰς

ΓΑΡ ΗΔΗ ΣΠΕΝΔΟΜΑΙ, ΚΑΙ Ο ΚΑΙΡΟΣ ΤΗΣ ΕΜΗΣ *ΑΝΑΛΥ-

ΣΕΩΣ ΕΦΕΣΤΗΚΕ. ΤΟΝ ΑΓΙΝΑ ΤΟΝ ΚΑΛΟΝ ΗΓΩΝΙΣΜΑΙ, 7

**Ppiv.12, Ephiv.18**

*σοῦ δὲ νῆφε ἐν πάσῃ, κακοπάθησον, ΕΡΓΟΝ ΠΟΙΗΣΟΝ 5

ΡΟΧΙ.13, Col iv.17

ΓΑΡ ΗΔΗ ΣΠΕΝΔΟΜΑΙ, ΚΑΙ Ο ΚΑΙΡΟΣ ΤΗΣ ΕΜΗΣ *ΑΝΑΛΥ-

*ΣΕΩΣ ΕΦΕΣΤΗΚΕ. ΤΟΝ ΑΓΙΝΑ ΤΟΝ ΚΑΛΟΝ ΗΓΩΝΙΣΜΑΙ, 7

**Ppiv.13, Col iv.20, Ephiv.21**

*ΑΠΟΚΕΙ ΜΟΙ Ο ΤΗΣ ΔΙΑΚΟΙΣΥΝΗΣ ΣΕ ΓΕΦΑΝΟΣ, ΟΝ ΑΠΟ-

ΔΩΣΕΙ ΜΟΙ Ο ΚΥΡΙΟΣ ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ, οἱ δικαιοὶ κρι-

*ΤΗΣ ΟΥ ΜΟΝΟΝ ΔΕ ΕΜΟΙ, ΑΛΛΑ ΚΑΙ ΠΑΣΙ ΤΟΙΣ ἩΓΟΠΗΚΟΙΣ

ΤΗΝ ΕΠΙΦΑΝΕΙΑΝ ΑΥΤΟΥ.

**Col ii.19-23, Pph 24**

*ΣΠΟΥΔΑΣΩΝ ΕΛΘΕΙΝ ΠΡΟΣ ΜΕ ΤΑΞΕΩΣ ΔΗΜΑΣ ΓΑΡ 9

*ΜΕ ΕΓΚΑΤΕΛΙΠΕΝ, ΑΓΑΠΗΖΑΣ ΤΟΝ ΝΥΝ ΑΙΣΘΑΝΑ, ΚΑΙ ΕΠΟΡ-

*ΕΥΘΕΙΑΣ ΕΙΣ ΘΕΣΣΑΛΟΝΙΚΗΝ, ΚΡΗΣΙΚΗΣ ΕΙΣ ΓΑΛΑΤΙΑΝ, ΤΙΤΟΣ

*ΕΙΣ ΔΑΛΜΑΤΙΑΝ. ΛΟΥΚΑΣ ΕΣΤΙ ΜΟΝΟΣ ΜΕΤ'ΕΜΟΥ. ΜΑΡ- 

*ΚΩΝ ΑΝΑΛΑΒΩΝ ΑΓΕ ΜΕΤΑ ΣΕ ΑΥΤΟΥ. ΕΤΙ ΓΑΡ ΜΟΙ ΥΨΗ-

*ΣΤΟΣ ΕΙΣ ΔΙΑΚΟΙΝΙΑΝ. ΤΥΧΙΚΟΝ ΔΕ ΑΠΕΣΤΕΙΛΑ ΕΙΣ ΕΦΕΣΟΝ. 12

**Pph uff, Ephiv.21f, Coliv.7f**

*ΤΟΝ *ΦΑΙΛΟΝΝΗΝ ΟΝ ΑΠΕΛΙΠΟΝ ἐν τρωαδι πάρα 13

ΚΑΡΠΩΙ ΕΡΧΟΜΕΝΟΣ ΦΕΡΕ, ΚΑΙ ΤΑ ΒΙΒΛΙΑ, ΜΑΛΙΣΤΑ ΤΑΣ

*ΜΕΜΒΡΑΝΑΣ. ΑΛΕΞΑΝΔΡΟΣ Ο *ΧΑΛΚΕΥΣ ΠΟΛ-14

ΛΑ ΜΟΙ ΚΑΚΑ ΕΝΕΔΕΙΞΑΤΟ ΑΠΟΔΩΣΕΙ ΑΥΤΟΙ Ο

ΚΥΡΙΟΣ ΚΑΤΑ ΤΑ ΕΡΓΑ ΑΥΤΟΥ. ΟΝ ΚΑΙ ΣΥ ΦΥ- 15

ΛΑΣΣΟΥ, ὉΙΑΙΝ ΓΑΡ ΑΝΤΕΣΤΗ ΤΟΙΣ ΗΜΕΤΕΡΟΙΣ

ΛΟΓΟΙΣ.

* ΠΛΗΡΟΣΟΝ et Col iv.17.

b. *ΣΥΝ ΕΜΟΙ ΜΟΝΟΣ ΤΩΝ ΤΩΝ etc.

c. of 2 Cor. xiii, xiii ύπερλέαν.
ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΝ Β

16 ἙΝ ΤΗΙ ΠΡΩΤΗΙ ΜΟΥ ἈΠΟΛΟΓΙΑΙ ΟΥ∆ΕΙΣ ΜΟΙ ΠΑΡΕΓΕ: Ἅν τ.ι.11, τ.ιι.1
Α.ΤΟ, ΑΛΛΑ ΠΑΝΤΕΣ ΜΕ ΕΓΚΑΤΕΛΙΠΟΝ ΜΗ ΑΥΤΟΙΣ
17 ΛΟΓΙΣΘΕΙΝ. ὁ ΔΕ ΚΥΡΙΟΣ ΜΟΙ ΠΑΡΕΣΤΗ, ΚΑΙ ΕΝΕΔΥΝΑ- Ἅν τ.ι.ιτ., (τ.ιι.23).Ῥρ.ι
ΜΩΣΕ ΜΕ, ΊΝΑ ΔΙ’ ΕΜΟΥ ΤΟ ΚΗΡΥΧΜΑ "ΠΛΗΡΟΦΟΡΗΘΗΙ, ὅτ.λ.14, 1.τι.ι.25.TextChanged,
ΚΑΙ ΑΚΟΥΣΗΙ ΠΑΝΤΑ ΤΑ ΕΘΝΗ ΚΑΙ ΕΡΡΥΣΘΗΝ ΕΚ ΣΤΟ- Ἅν τ.ιι.27f
18 ΜΑΤΟΣ ΛΕΟΝΤΟΣ. ΡΥΣΣΑΙ ΜΕ Ο ΚΥΡΙΟΣ ΑΠΟ ΠΑΝ. Πε π.ιι.22
ΤΟΣ ΕΡΓΟΥ ΠΟΝΗΡΟΥ, ΚΑΙ ΣΩΣΕΙ ΕΙΣ ΤΗΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΕΙΑΝ 2.Κορ.ι.10, Γα.ι.4
18 ΑΥΤΟΥ ΤΗΝ ΕΠΟΥΡΑΝΙΩΝ. Ὅλ.ι.ιι., Ί.Τη.ιι.

ΩΙ Η ΔΟΕΑ ΕΙΣ ΤΟΥΣ ΑΙΩΝΑΣ ΤΩΝ ΑΙΩΝΩΝ. ΑΜΗΝ. Γα.ι.5, Ρρ.ι.τ.οf
19 ΑΣΠΑΣΑΙ ΠΡΙΣΚΑΝ ΚΑΙ ΑΚΥΛΑΝ, ΚΑΙ ΤΟΝ ΟΝΗΣΙΦΟΡΟΥ ΟΙΚΟΝ. ᾿Ρο.ξι.3
20 ΕΡΑΣΤΟΣ ΕΜΕΙΝΕΝ ΕΝ ΚΟΡΙΝΘΩΙ. ΤΡΟΦΙΜΟΝ ΔΕ Ὅτ.λ.ι.ι.23 ᾿Ακ.ξι.ι.ι
21 ΑΠΕΛΙΠΟΝ ΕΝ ΜΙΛΗΤΩΙ ΑΣΘΕΝΟΥΝΤΑ. ΣΠΟΥΔΑΣΟΝ ΠΡΟ Ὅτ.τι.ιι.12
ΧΕΙΜΟΝΟΣ ΕΛΘΕΙΝ.

ΑΣΠΑΣΕΤΑΙ ΣΕ ΕΥΒΟΥΛΟΣ, ΚΑΙ ΠΟΥΔΗΣ, ΚΑΙ ΛΙΝΟΣ, Ρρ.ι.τ.οf
22 ΚΑΙ ΚΛΑΥΔΙΑ, ΚΑΙ ΟΙ ΑΔΕΛΦΟΙ ΠΑΝΤΕΣ. Ο ΚΥΡΙΟΣΤΒ
ΜΕΤΑ ΤΟΥ ΠΝΕΥΜΑΤΟΣ ΣΟΥ.

Ἡ. ΧΑΡΙΣ ΜΕΘ’ ΥΜΩΝ. Ὅλ.ι.ι.8

α ΠΛΗΡΟΦΘΗΙ cf ῾Ρο.ιii.4
b ᾿ΙΗΣΟΥΣ. W.Η.ι.ι., v S txt.
ΠΑΥΛΟΣ δούλος Θεοῦ ἀπόστολος δὲ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, κατὰ πίστιν ἐκλεκτῶν Θεοῦ καὶ ἐπίγνωσεν ἀληθείας τῆς κατ' εὐσεβείαν, ἐπὶ ἐλπίδι ζωῆς αἰωνίου ἡν ἐπιγιγνέσθαι. ὁ ἀμειωθῆς Θεὸς πρὸς χρόνιαν αἰωνίων, ἐφανέρωσε δὲ καὶ ἀδιάβροχος ἰδιώς τὸν λόγον αὐτοῦ ἐν κηρύχωμα ἐν ἐπιστευθήναι ἐγὼ κατ' ἐπιταγήν του σωτήρος ἡμῶν Θεοῦ, Τίτω γνη- σίῳ τέκνῳ κατὰ κοινὴν πίστιν. Χάρις καὶ εἰρήνη ἀπὸ Θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ σωτήρος ἡμῶν.

Τούτου χάριν ἀπελιπον σὲ ἐν Κρήτῃ ἵνα τα λείποντα 5 ἐπιδιορθῶσί, καὶ καταστήσῃς κατὰ πόλιν προσβυ-
τέρους, ὡς ἐγὼ σοι διεταξάμην: εἰ τις ἐστὶν ἄνέγκλητος, μιᾶς γυναικὸς ἀνήρ, τέκνα ἐχὼν πιστὰ, μὴ ἐν κατηγορίᾳ ἀσωτίας ἢ ἀνυπότακτα. δεῖ γὰρ τὸν ἐπίσκοπον ἀνέγ-7 κλητὸν ἔναι, ὡς Θεῦ οἰκονόμον, ἡμι αὐθάδη, ἡμὶ ορ-
γίλον, ἡμὶ παροίκων, ἡμὶ πλήκτην, ἡμὶ αἰσχροκερδῆ, ἀλ-
λα, φιλόζενον, φιλαγάθον, σώφρονα, δίκαιον, ὅσιον,
ἐγκρατῆ, ἀντεχόμενον τοῦ κατὰ τὴν διαδήκην πιστοῦ 9
λόγου, ἵνα δυνατὸς ἡ καὶ παρακαλεῖν ἐν τῇ διαδικασίᾳ
τῇ ὑγιαινοῦσῃ καὶ τοὺς ἁντιλέγοντας ἐλέγχειν. Εἰς γὰρ 10
πολλοὶ ἁνυπότακτοι, ματαιολόγοι καὶ φρεναπάται,
μάλιστα οἱ ἐκ περιτόμης, οὓς δεῖ ἐπιστομίζειν. οἴνινες 11
ὅλους ὀίκους ἀνατρέπουσι διάδοχοντεςἡμὲν ἀνασφηνοῦ κέρδους χάριν. εἰπὲ τις τις ἄνων ιῶν ἀριτῶν προφήτης, 12
Κρήτης ἅν ἐφεσθαι, κακὰ θηρία, γαστέρες ἄργοι.

ἲ μαρτυρία αὕτη ἐστὶν ἀληθῆς. δὴ ἢν ἀντὶ ἐλεγχὲ 13
ἄτοτο ἀπότομως, ἵνα ὑγιαίνωσιν ἐν τῇ πίστει, μὴ προσφε-
χοντες ἵνα διεισδύουσιν καὶ ἐντολαῖς ἀνθρώπων
ἀποστρεφομένων τὴν ἀληθείαν. πάντα καθαρὰ τοῖς 15
καθαροῖς τοῖς δὲ μεμικαμένοις καὶ ἀπίστοις οὐδὲν καθαρόν,
ἀλλὰ μεμίαινται ἁτῶν καὶ ὁ νοῦς καὶ ἡ συνείδησις. Θεὸν 16
ὄμολογούσιν εἰδέναι, τοῖς δὲ ἐργοῖς ἀρνοῦνται, βεβλικτοῖς
ἀντίκα ἀνείδης καὶ πρὸς πάνθεν ἔργον ἀγαθὸν ἅδοκίμου.

Σὺ δὲ λάλει ἐὰν πρέπει τῇ ὑγιαινοῖσιν διαδικασίᾳ: 17

† Ro xii. 16 cit. Is. ix. 10.

1 Cor xvi. 13 etc.

cf. 1 Th. 3.
ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΤΟΝ . II 3–III 9

5 νεος, *σώφρονος, ἀγνός, *οἰκουργοῦς, ἀγάθας, ὑποτασσομένως
tοῖς ἱδίοις ἀνδράσιν, ἵνα μὴ ὁ λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ βλασφημηθῇ.

6 τοὺς νεωτέρους ἀσάυτοις παρακαλεὶ σωφρονεῖν περὶ πάντων

7 τοῖς σεαυτόν παρεχόμενοι τούπον καλῶν ἐργαν, ἐν ᾗ διδα-

8 σαλία *ἀφθορίαν, σεμύστητα, λόγον ἕγιν, *ἀκατάγνωστον,
 irresponsible ἵνα ὁ ἐξ ἐναντίας ἐνταγμένη, μηδὲν ἐχον λέγειν περὶ ἡμῶν φαῦ.

9 λοι: δουλοὺς ἱδίοις δεσπόταις ὑποτάσσοσθαι, ἐν πάσιν εὐ-

10 ἀρέστους εἶναι, μὴ ἀντιλεγόντας, μὴ νοσφιξιομένους,

11 ἐν πάσιν. ἐπεφάνη γὰρ ἡ χάρις τοῦ Θεοῦ *σωτη-

12 ρίας πάσιν ἀνθρώποις, παιδεύοντας ἡμᾶς, ἵνα ἀρνημένοι

13 καὶ δικαιός καὶ *εὐσεβές ζήσωμεν ἐν τῷ νῦν αἰώνι, ἐν

14 τοῦ μεγάλου Θεοῦ καὶ σωτηρὸς ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὡς

15 πᾶσαν πάσιν ἐνδείκτημα ἡμᾶς θέας ἀπὸ 

16 τῆς καλῶν ἐργαν. 

17 Ἑλαγγέληται, καὶ παρακάλει καὶ 

18 ἐλέγχετε μετὰ πάσης ἐπιταγῆς. μηδείς σου *περιφοροῦν 

19 ΠΙ 3

1 Ὑπομίμνησκε ἀυτοὺς ἁρχαῖα ἔξουσίας ὑποτάσσομες

2 ἡμῖν παρακαλεῖ, πρὸς πάν ἐργαν ἀγαθῶς ἐτευμῶσε ἑνεῖ,

3 μηδένα βλασφημεῖν, *ἄμαχος εἶναι, ἐπιτελεῖσθαι, πᾶσαν ἐν

4 διεκμένους προποτὴν πρὸς πάντας ἀνθρώποις. ἢμεν

5 γάρ ποτε καὶ ἡμεῖς ἁνότητι, ἀπείθει, πλανώμενοι, δου-

6 λευτέρας ἐρυμίας καὶ ἡ σοι ποικίλες ἐν κακία καὶ 

7 φθόνωσί διαγόντες, *στυγνοῖ, μεθυμήθηθαι ἀλλήλους.

8 ὢτε δέ 

9 ἡ χριστιανία καὶ ἡ φιλανθρωπία ἐπεφάνη τοῦ σωτῆρος 

10 ἠμῶν Ἱσοῦ, οὕτως ἐργάσεσται ἐν δικαιοσύνη, ἐποίησα-

11 σαμεν ἡμεῖς ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὸν 

12 διὰ λουτροῦ πολιγενεσίας καὶ ἀνακαίνωσεν τοιοῦτο

13 μιος Ἀγίου, οὕτως ἐργάσεσται ἐν δικαίωσιν 

14 Ἡσιοῦ 

15 ἡμῶν τοῦ σωτήρος ἡμῶν, ἵνα δικαιοσθῇν τῇ ἐκεί-

16 νοι χαρίτι κληρονομάθεοι γεννηθῶμεν κατ’ ἐπίδειξιν 

17 ἡμῶς αἰώ-

18 νίου. πιστός ὁ λόγος, καὶ περὶ τούτων βουλομαί 

19 σε *διαβεβαιοῦσθαι, ἵνα *φροντίζωσι καλῶν ἐργαν προ-

20 Ἰσταθαι οἱ πεπιστευόμενοι. ἡμῶν, τούτα ἐστί καλὰ καὶ 

21 Ῥο v.21f

22 Ῥο ix.6, ii.24

23 Ῥο iii.14

24 Col iii.22

25 Ῥο v.15f; Ῥο xv.10 etc.

26 Ῥο xiii.1

27 Ῥο ix.3

28 Pp iv.5

29 2 Cor viii.24, x.1

30 Ga iv.3, Eph ii.9

31 Ῥο vi.6,12, Col iii.5ff

32 Ga iv.9

33 Eph ii.8f

34 Ῥο iii.15 cit Is lx.7

35 Ῥο vii.25 etc. iii.24, v.1,2

36 Ῥο viii.17, iv.14

37 2 Cor xii.2

38 Eph x.22

39 Eph vi.10, 12, 10, 12

40 Eph iii.19

41 Eph v.15

42 Eph vii.25

43 Eph x.22

44 Eph vi.10, 12, 10, 12

45 Eph vii.25

46 Eph x.22

47 Eph vi.10, 12, 10, 12

48 Eph vii.25

49 Eph x.22
ΠΡΟΣ ΤΙΤΟΝ

1 Cor iii. 20 υπ Ρ3. xciv. εἰςὶ γὰρ ἀνωφελεῖς καὶ μάταιοι. *αἰρετικὸν ἄνθρωπον μετὰ μίαν καὶ δευτέραν νουθεσίαν παραῖτο, εἴδώς ἵνα ἐξέστραπται ὁ τοιοῦτος καὶ ἀμαρτάνει ὡς ἀυτοκατάκριτος.

1 Cor xvi. 3-24

ΟΤΑΝ ΠΕΜΨΩ ΑΡΤΕΜΑΝ ΠΡΩΣ ΣΕ Η ΤΥΧΙΚΟΝ, 12. ΣΠΟΥΔΑΣΩΝ ΕΛΘΕΙΝ ΠΡΟΣ ΜΕ ΕΙΣ ΝΙΚΟΠΟΛΙΝ ΕΚΕΙ ΓΑΡ ΚΕΚΡΙΚΑ ΠΑΡΑΧΕΙΜΑΣΑΙ. ΖΗΝΑΝ ΤΟΝ ΝΟΜΙΚΟΝ 19 ΚΑΙ ΑΠΟΛΛΩ ΣΠΟΥΔΑΙΩΣ ΠΡΟΠΕΜΨΩΝ, ἸΝΑ ΜΗΔΕΝ ΑΥΤΟΙΣ ΛΕΙΠΗ. ΜΑΝΘΑΝΕΤΩΣΑΝ ΔΕ ΚΑΙ ΟΙ ΗΜΕΤΕ- 14 ΡΟΙ ΚΑΛΩΝ ΕΡΓΩΝ ΠΡΟΙΣΤΑΣΘΑΙ ΕΙΣ ΤΑΣ ΑΝΑΓΚΑΙΑΣ ΧΡΕΙΑΣ, ἸΝΑ ΜΗ ὩΣΙΝ ΑΚΑΡΠΟΙ. ΑΣΠΑΖΟΝΤΑΙ ΣΕ ΟΙ 15 ΜΕΤ' ἙΜΟΥ ΠΑΝΤΕΣ. ΑΣΠΑΣΑΙ ΤΟΥΣ ΦΙΛΟΥΝΤΑΣ ΗΜΑΣ ΕΝ ΠΙΣΤΕΙ. Η ΧΑΡΙΣ ΜΕΤΑ ΠΑΝΤΩΝ ΥΜΩΝ.